



王明同志

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 1

Take your favorite novel wherever you go  
[novelepubs.xyz](http://novelepubs.xyz)

Huang Jing Yang

My name is Huang Jing Yang, born in the year 1992 of the Lunar Calendar, I am the Eldest son in my Family.

I was born in a remote mountain village located in the south west. At the time that I was born, my father was working outside. I hadn't even turned one year old before my mother, following my father's footsteps, also went to work outside. Now, many years later, kids like me are called the left behind children.

In our village, if the first born is a daughter, then one can have a second pregnancy. As the first born in my family was a boy, a second child was not allowed. In my childhood, I was no different from other children. However, if one listens to my Grandpa and Grandma, it seems I quite loved to cry in the evenings. A love for crying was seemingly not that great of a defect. My Grandma always used to say, that I originally should have been a girl, must have been an error in selecting the litter.

At the age of 5, I accompanied my Grandpa to the mountains to let the cow graze. It was from the interiors of the mountain that I recovered a round piece of metal. From that day onwards, my life started becoming somewhat odd.

That piece of metal was badly corroded. At the time that I picked it up, I couldn't see the characters and patterns on it. After returning to home, I rubbed off the rust on it, and unexpectedly it turned out to be golden in colour. The pattern on top of it was very strange. When I glanced at it, it felt as if I had been sucked in by that pattern. Starting from that day onwards, I became different from other children.

"Aiya, Yang Yang how come you have become so strange these days? You never go out playing anymore." Grandma was the first one to discover my abnormality.

"Maybe he has been thinking of his Parents. All year round, not knowing when they will come back. I already raised a son, yet now I also have to raise my grandson. Ah, this is the way of the world!" Grandpa wasn't very concerned.

At that time, I wasn't able to hear even the slightest bit of sound. That metal piece's pattern started to move before my very eyes. I saw the skies up above stretching to as far as the eyes could see. Saw the vast and boundless earth. Saw the thundering nine heavens. Saw a gentle breeze blow by, perhaps on it's way to create a violent storm. Saw the

grandeur and loftiness of the majestic mountain ranges. Saw the from time to time mirror-like tranquility and at other times turbulence, of rivers and lakes. Saw the water transform into air, air condense into water, water freeze into ice and snow. Saw the raging great fires.....

However, all the sounds and the imagery of life had somehow disappeared from my mind. Grandma began anxiously shaking my body, I couldn't feel anything. Grandpa with burning impatience called out my name, yet I couldn't hear anything.

The father and mother, who hadn't returned home even after years and months, hurriedly rushed back. Carrying me in their embrace while seeking out doctors in all directions, I still couldn't feel anything.

Nobody knew what had actually happened to me.

Some people in the village began to say that I had been cursed. Grandpa discovered that my hands were firmly gripping a piece of metal that had some dread inducing patterns on top of it, enough to make one wonder from where I managed to catch hold of this metal piece.

Even though I knew nothing of the outside world, I cherished this metal piece as if it were my life. I cried while tightly embracing the metal disc.

Mother and Father took me along to go to the county hospital and the province hospital to get me looked at over and over. All the money they had earned while working themselves to death over all these years, had all been converted into stacks of worthless tickets and piles of useless bills, but I still didn't wake up. No matter whether it was the county hospital or province hospital, they both said that my body was completely fine, only my brain had some problem.

How could the Doctor have been able to say, that I was definitely not sick?

Grandpa and Grandma went around everywhere beseeching the gods and praying to Buddha, they even found some Yin-Yang practitioners for me. These people who dressed up as Gods while playing as Devils, how could they possibly have managed to cure me? Six months later, my family's savings had been more or less used up. Grandpa, Grandma, Father and Mother, had all thoroughly given up hope.

June is the time of harvesting rice crops. The entire family sits in the Shai Valley Plains enjoying the sun and the cool breeze. My eyes were still blankly gazing at the metal piece in my hand.

"Let's have another one!" The tobacco pipe in Grandpa's hands was making a zi zi sound as he sucked in a breath with great effort, while flames flickered in the night.

Grandma, feeling her heartache, looked at me, and couldn't help but continuously shed tears: "My darling grandson, how did you become like this?"

Father and Mother didn't speak a word.

After having finished taking care of the two, Father and Mother again went southwards to take up part time jobs. They didn't return at the time of Spring Festival that year. The next year, they gave me a little brother. However, fearing that I would not be a good influence,

they never brought back my little brother home. After the younger brother was born, Grandma also went to live with them. Leaving behind only Grandpa to be at home with me.

Although I wasn't able to respond to anything, I was still able to see everything. Yet everything that I saw seemed like a story playing on the silver screen, with me being just a spectator. This kind of a feeling was extremely strange. However, as more and more time went by, I found my mind getting more immersed into that pattern on the metal piece. At the center of the metal piece was a pattern of Yin-Yang fish that were turning in circles.

After Grandma left, the entire burden of the family farm work came down onto Grandpa alone. In addition to taking care of the farm, he had to take care of me. Contrary to what one might expect, I was easy to deal with, I was able to eat, drink and sleep. Only going to the toilet needed me to call Grandpa, and I would be able to do it.

As a result of me being in such a state, it was really too demonic. The villagers were afraid to let their children play with me. Even my own father and mother were afraid of letting me meet my younger brother, what use is talking about others?

Whenever Grandpa went to work in the fields, he would usually put me on top of a small stool that had been placed on a ridge, enabling me to sit on the ridge for a very long time. At my side would be a wooden stick for support and an umbrella for shade. It was only after that, that Grandpa would go to work the fields. Grandpa was viewed as a very capable person in the village, as he was an expert in all the crop related techniques.

The wind blew, and the umbrella tied to the side, in the face of the strong winds, bent to one side. My body was exposed to the scorching heat of the sun, but I was completely oblivious. My eyes were for the most part staring at the metal piece in my hands.

It was only after Grandpa finished the farm work that he discovered what had happened around me. At once he came running over, but was surprised to find that in spite of everything, I appeared to have not even the slightest bit of issue and there wasn't even the slightest bit of sweat on my head. The clothes on my body were all cool, as if the scorching sun was completely nonexistent. The ground that I was sitting on was also unexpectedly cool.

Grandpa didn't say anything and instead just collected the umbrella and then pulled me up: "Let's go home, Let's go home."

The villagers who came across me, would always ask about my circumstances: "He hasn't opened his mouth in two years?"

"Two years! Ai !" Grandpa would always let out a sigh.

At that time, I was immersed in a very strange state. I could feel that the Heaven, Earth, Lightning, Wind, Mountains, Ponds, Water and Fire, all possessed a strange connection to each other. There was a kind of energy that was connecting them together. It was only later that I came to know that this energy was called Primordial Qi.

As the New year rapidly approached, other families were already bustling with noise and fervent excitement, while our family was cold and cheerless. In my family, only Grandpa and I were at home. Father and Mother called during the new year time saying that with our native place being extremely cold, they were afraid that my younger brother would

suffer from the cold. Father and Mother were prepared to work overtime during the new year, Grandma was also looking after younger brother. The round-trip journey was also far too expensive. Therefore, this year, only Grandpa and I were at home.

Grandpa was not very happy, but he never got angry in front of me. Just kept puffing on his tobacco pipe in a depressed fashion. The Villagers had already started using cigarettes with filters for smoking, but Grandpa still hadn't thrown away his tobacco pipe.

"Second Uncle, Seventh Elder Brother entrusted me with two hundred yuan while returning, to give to Elder for purchasing supplies for the new year." The speaker was my thirteenth Uncle Huang Cheng Gao, who had been working alongside my Father and Mother in the South. Thirteenth Uncle had returned along with his family yesterday. He was a distant relative within the same clan on my paternal side. Thirteenth Uncle and my Father had the same Paternal Great-Grandfather. Sharing the same Great-Grandfather were altogether sixteen Uncles belonging to the same generation. My father ranked as the Seventh Eldest. I was in the middle of the pack within my generation, ranking at the tenth eldest. There were quite a few people in my generation, more than twenty people.

Grandpa's complexion has not been looking well these past several days, but seeing thirteenth uncle coming over, he reluctantly put a little smile on his face.

"Thirteenth. Your seventh brother just gave you these two hundred yuan? Didn't he give anything else for the child?"

"Second Uncle, please watch what you say. If Seventh Brother had asked me to bring along anything, would I have embezzled it? He just gave me these two hundred yuan, nothing else." Thirteenth Uncle laughed smilingly.

"I am not saying that you embezzled. Yet they, husband and wife, gave birth to this child, but now that he is older, they suddenly care less about him? Is he not a person?" Grandpa's complexion had become blue.

"As the matter of me and my Family's return to the village was really hectic, I didn't get to tell Seventh Brother about it until the very last minute. Because of this, Seventh Brother only had time to hurriedly give me 200 yuan before I left with my family. Which parents don't dote on their own son?" Thirteen uncle clearly did not speak the truth, and also could not deceive my grandpa. Thirteenth Uncle gave me a glance, and embarrassedly said: "Look at my memory, when I came out I didn't even think of grabbing some candy for Yang Yang."

"This child has committed a sin (what a pity), sweetness, bitterness and sourness, they are all the same when they reach his mouth. It's still a good thing, this way, he won't be aware of who is good for him and who is bad." Grandpa's dried up eyes had become somewhat moist.

Thirteenth Uncle was very embarrassed, and after exchanging some random pleasantries, quickly left.

Because of me, within the village, no matter whether it was an adult or a child, nobody came to our house. After all, a child was supposed to be lively, healthy and active, so with this kind of unusual and scary thing going on, who would still dare to stay in touch. Within the village, I was a kind of ominous person.

In the evening, sounds of quiet whimpering came out from within Grandpa's room.

I could see all of this through my eyes, and listen through my ears. However, I was neither happy nor sad. I just coldly looked upon everything that was happening.

The far away white clouds, the distant greenery of the mountains, the murmurs of running water. Everything was just like mist.

The next day, early in the morning, Grandpa pulled me along as he walked onto the streets.

Although I didn't respond to whatever those close relatives were shouting, they would ask what I was up to, to which I would continue walking mechanically.

The scene of me following my Grandpa with none of us saying anything as we walked in silence on the avenue, was always enough to make anybody feel baffled.

"Your Grandson is really obedient, walking all the way, neither making any noise nor creating any trouble. If it were my grandson, then he would have long ago rushed out everywhere." An old man who was going the same way couldn't help but remark.

"My Grandson has this kind of temperament." The smile on Grandpa's face was very stiff.

At this time, a person who was beside the old man whispered a few words in his ears. The Old man glanced at my body with a very strange expression in his eyes.

Good things don't go beyond the door, Bad things travel a thousand li(500 km). Within the eight villages in the circumference of ten li, there were very few people who did not know about my situation.

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 2

Waking with a start

Chang Mountain Town was a big town, and was located in the center of several surrounding townships. No need for opening markets.

After all was said and done, Grandpa had bought me new clothes, spending more than a hundred yuan. Of the new year expenses sent by my father and mother, more than half had been spent. Grandpa had saved some money that he had earned through labour, which he used to buy meat, and fish. After thinking for a while, he also bought some long cylindrical fireworks.

“Oh Child, other people don’t even treat you as a person, but you on your own must work for improvement! Get Well!” Grandpa said while feeling sad, as he stuffed the fireworks into my hands.

The streets every year during the New Year’s time were always crammed until they were almost jam-packed. This was due to all the shopping in preparation for New Year. As far as one could see, one would only be able to see a dense mass. There’s no way one would be able to see the road in front.

Jostling about in the crowd along with Grandpa, the loud hubbub of the streets appeared to have become muted when it reached my ears. I was always holding on to that piece of metal, which had already been strung into a red string by Grandpa and hung onto my neck. However, I would still keep rubbing the metal piece in my palm out of habit.

The pattern on that metal piece had already been imprinted onto my mind. With my eyes closed, I could see the black and white fish constantly revolving, and black and white feathers located all around the pattern, constantly changing irregularly. Grandpa would keep the things purchased in a large wicker basket, using a shoulder pole to carry it. I also clung onto one hand, not letting go. The crowd on the street was bustling with activity, making it very difficult for Grandpa to walk on the streets.

Along the way, whenever Grandpa would stop me, I would stop, whenever he let me walk, I would walk. Gradually, the bustling market had already been left behind by us.

Since only Grandpa and I were at home, the preparations this year were very simple. In the cavity of the stove, a few pieces of smoked dark meat were hanging. Atop the main room, a few pieces of dried fish were hung. These things after the year passes, and when my father and mother have to go south again for their part-time jobs, they were supposed to take these with them.

On the first day of the new year, one mustn’t see blood, so chicken, ducks, fish must have

all been killed in the previous year. Grandpa remained busy for the entire day. At last in the evening, he took me along to set off the fireworks.

“Yang Yang, come, these fireworks are yours.” Grandpa stuffed the fireworks into my hands.

I merely mechanically received them.

“Ai.” Grandpa let out a sigh. He took me along to an empty area in the Shai Valley Plains, “Come, Grandpa will set off fireworks with you.”

Grandpa with his hands holding mine, would ignite the fireworks and then raise my hand holding the firework up high.

(Hong!)

The firework rushed towards the sky, before suddenly exploding, bursting forth with a brilliant five coloured blossom in the sky.

“Look, so beautiful!”

In my mind also there was a loud bang, as I suddenly came to my senses.

“Grandpa.”

“Ai. En?” Grandpa for a split second looked as if he had received an electric shock, as he looked at me in astonishment.

“You, Can you call for me once more?” Grandpa tightly grabbed my shoulders.

“Grandpa.” I again called out. My eyes had again regained their clarity. Possessing a much greater intelligence compared to ordinary children.

“Good Grandson, my Good Grandson!” Grandpa tightly hugged me, while his tears flowed unhindered.

“Grandpa, I am already fine.” Having not spoken for more than two years, the words I spoke now were not really that orderly, but the logic behind the words spoken was already better than his contemporaries.

Grandpa pulled me to the Ancestor’s Memorial Tablet in the Main Room, before kneeling down into a kowtow.

“Many thanks Ancestor’s blessings! Many thanks Ancestor’s blessings!”

I know that in these two years that I had spent not talking, I had comprehended a lot of Dao Truths. With merely a glance at the blowing wind and the swaying grass, I am able to determine the weather and whether it will remain clear or rain. Doesn’t matter whether I am asleep or awake, doesn’t matter whether I am standing or sitting, doesn’t matter whether I have stopped or I am walking, I am always able to sense the omnipresent Primordial Qi. I became aware of how the primordial qi is absorbed by my body, and later excreted as foul qi from the lungs.

There wasn’t the slightest relation between all these things of mine and those old ancestors of mine who had already long turned into dust, instead it was my Grandpa who had actually suffered extreme amount of torment due to it. If it wasn’t for Grandpa’s care, I



would have probably already been long lost in the world of the metal piece.

This piece of metal like a spark, had ignited the Dao Fire within my body. Perhaps it would be better to say that it was my key to enter the world of Daoist cultivation. The metal piece, which was made out of bronze, was roughly shaped into the form of the Yin-Yang Eight Divinatory Trigrams. However for me, it was an extremely precious treasure.

Because of me leaving behind a soul imprint during the process of Dao enlightenment, this bronze piece which was originally extremely ordinary had become somewhat different. It was exuding an extremely profound radiance. This was precisely the so called “Halo”. It was no longer an ordinary piece of metal. The protection of the halo ensured that even if it were to be buried underground for a hundred years, it wouldn’t rust.

“Good Good, quickly get up. Yang Yang, let Grandpa take a better look at you.” Grandpa quickly pulled me up. However, I discovered that Grandpa’s left leg was shaking. Grandpa in his youth had suffered hardships, and in a world of ice & snow had worked to build railroads, leading to him suffering from frostbite in his foot which had become an old complaint by now. Every time the weather changed, it would lead to intolerably severe pain.

“Grandpa, your feet are hurting again?” Grandpa’s pain was pulling at my heart, making me feel extremely distressed.

“Again?” This word used by me felt very unexpected to Grandpa. I had changed into an idiot two years ago, two years ago I was just a five year old child, how was I able to know about his old rheumatism in the legs?

I didn’t give explanation for it, these things cannot be easily explained, “Grandpa, I will bring you hot water to warm your feet.”

I made Grandpa sit down first, and then ran to get a wooden bowl filled with hot water, bringing it to Grandpa. After that I removed Grandpa’s shoes and socks, and then moved Grandpa’s feet into the bowl.

“Grandpa, you sit comfortably. I will wash your feet. From today onwards, let me take care of the Older generation such as yourself.” I said very earnestly. A seven year old child, even when being earnest, would still have some hint of childishness.

However, upon hearing that Grandpa was unusually moved, as he said with tears in his eyes: “Ai Ai, our Yang Yang is sensible.”

While on one hand I was warming Grandpa’s feet with hot water, on the other hand I was mobilizing the Primordial Qi in the surroundings to nourish Grandpa’s sore spots.

“Ah, so comfortable.” Grandpa, who was unconscious of the fact that his feet were getting better, was nonetheless feeling very comfortable in his mind.

The Year 1999, the Year of the Rabbit for me, one could say, was the beginning of a new life.

However, as far as villagers were concerned, I was still very much unusual. The children of the village still didn’t dare get too close to me. Anyways as far as I was concerned, I also had long ago stopped belonging to the world of these brats. I still didn’t speak much,

nor did I smile casually.

Even though my Father and Mother had become aware that I could once again speak, but there was no response. Apparently they had already given up on me.

Indeed, there were some major differences between me and other children. In my family including my younger brother, there were six people, divided amongst five people is altogether more than about five mu of land. Grandpa had raised an Ox. Now that I had become better, the duty of letting out the ox to graze naturally fell on me.

The village children still ostracized me, so naturally they wouldn't let me follow their cattle grazing group into the mountains. I was also disinclined to go into the mountains. The grass that grows on the ridges between the fields was actually very fresh and delicate, yet all children were generally not allowed to lead the cattle to the ridges, out of fear that the cattle would eat up the farm crops. However going to the mountains would be much more strenuous than going to the ridges.

However, I had a better way, as I led along the ox, I directed Primordial Qi into its brains with a pat before shouting: "Only permitted to eat grass!"

Actually, I don't know how to train oxen, but even so, with this pat I managed to seize control. I coiled the rope around its two horns that I was using to lead along the ox and then sat down on a stone on the roadside in a daze.

A Villager seeing the ox grazing on the edges of the fields unattended, came rushing over in a hurry.

"Yang Yang! Are you again playing dumb? If my family's seedlings are eaten, I will surely make your family compensate!"

I was disinclined to go and argue, amongst the Villagers nobody dared to seize me and ask what was going on.

That person ran to the farm and saw that ox hadn't eaten even a single farm crop. It was very honestly eating grass.

After the news of this matter spread around, the Villagers were even more convinced that I had been hit by an evil curse. Otherwise, how could such a strange occurrence be possible?

Grandpa hated those people who said that I had been struck by an evil curse, and would frequently scold the villagers' airs. As a result, Villagers no longer dared to say in front of me that I had been cursed, and played dumb. However, who is able to manage what people talk about in secret? The village children did not dare play with me.

Fortunately, during the second half of the year, I was supposed to go to school. By the year 1999, I had already turned seven years old, and were it not for the delay caused on account of me entering the Dao, then in the year 1997 itself I would have attended pre-school and in 1998 I should have gone to elementary school. Fortunately, I managed to wake up by this time, otherwise I would have had to wait until the next century for attending an elementary school.

Regarding the matter of attending elementary school, my Father and Mother didn't seem

to have the least bit of concern, nor did they remit any money. Grandfather had already given up on my Father and Mother, and were it not for her looking after the younger grandson, he would have already called Grandma back to Ba Jiao Village.

As far as going to school was concerned, I was not as interested as others of my age. Standing at a high position, one is naturally able to see farther. The profound and abstruse principles in the world have no end to be seen, and are not easily seen through. What possible thing can compare to it? Although I have come to, my life has undergone a total transformation.

At the time of getting me enrolled, Grandfather wanted to personally see me off. Just before it was time to leave, I looked up at the sky, then ran back and brought an umbrella.

“Yang Yang, there is so much Sun in the sky, and you took an umbrella, are you afraid of being in the sun?” Grandpa failed to understand what use I had for an umbrella.

“It will come in use later.” I also didn’t explain. Just continued holding on to the umbrella.

The village’s big fatty Huang Shulang looking at me holding the umbrella, at once shouted in a loud voice: “Look ah, that idiot, even with so much Sun he is carrying an umbrella!”

The big fatty’s father Huang Kui was the village’s butcher, all who wanted pigs butchered would come to him. At home they would constantly eat meat, this Huang Shulang liked eating lots of fat meat, and his voracious eating had finally made him a big fatty. The villagers often said that at the home where pigs are butchered, there is a big fat pig being raised.

Grandpa heard what had been said by Huang Shulang, and wrinkled his brows: “Huang Shu Lang, every year, you score an egg-shaped zero. It seems that eating all that fatty meat only made you put on fat and didn’t help your brain at all, eh?”

Huang Shu Lang was not afraid of my Grandpa, and dared to confront him as he said: “I flunked this year, and ended in the same class as Yang Yang. You just have a clear look, how the position of the first one from the bottom will go to your family’s Yang Yang.”

“Huang Shulang, Haven’t you woken up yet?” Grandpa said with a chuckle.

The school teachers had all heard about my ‘reputation’, but there was only one class at the first grade. With me having reached the age, the teacher-in-charge Guo Daoying of the first grade, no matter how reluctantly, could only permit me to enroll myself. However, from her face, I could see that she wasn’t willing to accept me as a student.

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 3

## It Rained

Early in the morning, the sky was originally extremely sunny and cloudless, nobody expected that soon after, when the villagers were preparing to return home and had walked half-way, the sky would suddenly become heavily overcast.

“Quick look! It’s raining over there! Huang Shulang pointed at a distant spot with his chubby fingers while his eyes were opened wide in a stare.

I leisurely opened the umbrella, not even paying the least bit of attention to the changes in the weather. In the morning, when I got up, the fluctuations in the World’s Primordial Qi had already informed me about this forthcoming rain.

The Villagers stared blankly at me standing beneath an umbrella.

Grandpa had already become used to these abilities of mine, and as far he was concerned, his grandson was the best. It didn’t matter to him if it was me from before, or the present me.

The villagers looked at me reverentially. However, very quickly they no longer had the inclination to care about me. It was because the heavy rain had already started pouring.

Raindrops as big as soybeans left behind blurs in their path, only to crash down onto the ground later and in the subsequent collapse break down into small pearls of rain and together with the dust rising from the splashes managing to form mist.

“Run fast!”

However, it was already too late, the village was already more than one li away by road. Even if one runs all the way home, he would still end up like a drowned rat. That leaves only one option, run to the nearby woods, look for a big tree with big branches and leaves and take shelter from the rain. It was only that with such heavy rainfall, even if one were under a big tree, it would still be nigh impossible to completely block the rain water.

My Grandpa and I walked through the forest while keeping our umbrellas propped up, while everyone else looked on enviously as we slowly moved towards the shabbily brick houses on the outskirts of the village. However, the clothes on Huang Shu Lang’s fat body had been completely drenched in the rain water making them see-through and the books in the school bag had also probably met with calamity.

Huang Shulang’s eyes were blankly staring at me, but I simply didn’t hold them in my eyes.

At the time we returned home, our ox had rammed and broken the wooden bolt, and had

come out of the cattle pen. It came running straight at me, and arched its head to be petted by my hand.

It had already become fond of me, since i would always pat my hand, infused with Primordial Qi, on its head when going for cattle grazing. After all this time of accumulation, it had become quite different from other oxen in appearance. The color of its coat had turned yellow and each time it came out, so long as it bellowed loudly, there wouldn't be a single cow in the village which could control itself.

The raindrops fell on the Ox's body, but couldn't penetrate the dense ox hair. The slender hairs were actually the ox's natural raincoat. The raindrops on the ox's body had trickled down to converge into a stream. The ox mischievously shook his body, and made the rain scatter all around like a flower, which made me and grandpa move to dodge hastily.

"You should have killed this Ox!" Grandpa said in a scolding tone, but had a smiling expression on his face.

An Ox is an important labor force for an agricultural family, and it is actually the basis of an agricultural family. Without this ox, even an expert of agricultural techniques would find it very difficult to plough the entire farmland after harvest is reaped. Even so, it is the year 1999, farmland is no longer as important to farmers, young people have all migrated in search for jobs, leaving behind only the old, weak, sick and the disabled in the villages.

The Ox was feeling very cheerful in the rain, apparently it was enjoying the baptism of the heavy rain. I could also sense that the heavy rain was bringing with it even purer Primordial Qi in the environment, and mixed within it was the aura of frightening thunder. For a moment, I once again became immersed in an oddly fantastic state. I also burst out into the rain, and began leaping about with the Ox. My pace was very bizarre, as if it were some kind of ancient ritual.

Grandpa looked at me, astonished, and wanted to rush out into the rain to pull me back to under the eaves. However, although my pace looked slow, Grandpa wasn't able to catch me consistently in a pattern. He simply couldn't even touch the hem of my clothing and instead looked like he was also jumping about in the rain like me.

The Big fatty Huang Shulang, after having managed to return to the village while braving the heavy rain, finally saw the scene of me, Grandpa and our family's ox, jumping about crazily in the rain.

"Crazy! Crazy! Their whole family is crazy! Even the Ox is crazy!"

Huang Shu Lang did not see me even though I was jumping crazily in the rain. However, the raindrops cascading down from the sky seemed to have grown eyes. When the raindrops had almost touched my body, they made a turn as if they were alive and not a drop of water stained my clothes or shoes. [TLNote: Thanks to GT for helping me with this para]

However, it was different for my Grandpa, his whole body was drenched with the pouring rain water. Grandpa suddenly stopped, and stared at me with eyes wide open. He saw that I was strangely joyous as I jumped around, but there wasn't even a single drop of water on my body.

“Ai!” Grandpa dejectedly walked back to beneath the eaves, and returned back into the house to change clothes. He had no other option but to accept the fact that I was quite different from other kids. He would prefer if I were an extremely ordinary kid. Looking at the scene from earlier, had made him feel extremely frightened in his heart.

The ox was very intelligent, it was much more sensitive to Primordial Qi than humans. As I was jumping about in the rain, the Primordial Qi in the surroundings began to converge onto me. Therefore, it kept following my footsteps from the beginning to the end, delightedly breathing in the Primordial Qi in the surroundings.

Jumping and Leaping, the rain finally stopped. In the distant mountain side, a beautiful rainbow could be seen hanging. I had also stopped. I could feel that within my body a special seed had already begun to sprout slowly. I know that more than two years of meditation, had planted a very special kind of a seed within my body. It was only later I learned that the seed was called, Dao.

I had stopped, only to discover that a lot of villagers had already encircled me on all sides. They were looking at me with strange looks in their eyes. I could see that they were afraid of me. Perhaps, they suspected that some kind of dreadful spirit had taken control of my body.

I ignored their gazes, and just patted the Ox’s head before saying: “Go graze!”

The Ox very obediently walked over to the ridge. This fellow was very intelligent, and started grazing on the ridges eating one mouthful at a time, patiently waits for the stubble left behind after eating to become of the same height as the previous time before eating it a second time.

The Villagers seeing that the grass on the field ridges looked fresh and tender, wanted to pull their cows to graze on the grass on the ridges too, but who could have imagined that those cows refused to eat in the same region as where my family’s ox was grazing. Everyone already knew that I was evil, now they had even connected our family’s Ox to be evil.

Seeing our family’s Ox walking hastily towards them, the villagers left for home in a hurry, stepping aside from the way and letting our family’s cow pass.

The look in Grandpa’s eyes had been different from that of villagers from the very start. Other people looked at me only with dread, but Grandpa looked at me only with love and affection. He worried that one day I would turn back to how I was before, not speaking for two years. He was also worried that if I get infected by unhygienic things, then I wouldn’t be able to live long in the future.

“Yang Yang, come in!” Grandpa called out in a clear voice from behind me.

Once I entered through the door, Grandpa slammed the door shut. Grandpa didn’t like others looking at me as if they were looking at a freak.

“Grandpa.” I called out to him.

“In the future, you must not jump about like you did today.” Grandpa didn’t leave me any room for resistance.

The only person who I was concerned about right now is Grandpa, and Grandpa's words for me were like inviolable imperial edicts.

Attending school, my life became more systematic.

At school, I still didn't talk much. There would always be some hands pointing fingers at me behind my back, but I had already become accustomed to it. The Teachers regarded this special student with a special fondness. This instead made me even more free. To be honest, my grades were not bad, and the contents of the elementary school textbook appeared to be too simple. Therefore, the classrooms had become somewhat dull. After some thought, making a young person spend one and a half years time to memorise the addition table by heart was indeed a boring and dull task. However, after going to primary school, this had become my everyday life.

In the first grade of elementary school, on the first page of the language and literature book, one studies the phonetic letters a, o, e, and students try to earnestly follow the teacher's pronunciation, I also felt it was interesting. However, my way of thinking was different from an ordinary child. I was thinking that each and every one of these simple sounds, was capable of moving the worldly primordial qi. When I tried to pronounce a, o, e, while trying to draw on the world's primordial qi, perhaps the utterance was not correct and thus the effect was also not good.

In the class, there was a child named Ma Jindong who stammered, his mouth was open for a long time but he was unable to utter anything, and anxiously tried to stamp his feet. Seeing his mannerisms all the children in the class except for me and Ma Jindong began laughing hysterically. Guo Daoying, the class teacher and language & literature teacher, also couldn't help but smile with pursed lips.

However I was greatly enlightened, since pronunciations are unable to move the world's primordial qi, then what about matching footsteps? That scene of jumping about in the rain came to my mind again. As someone who was just seven years old, without any apprehensions in my mind whatsoever, I quickly began to act on my thoughts. I got up and walked to the vacant area at back of the classroom and started jumping. Combining with it the pronunciation of a, o, e. This time the rhythm was in sync, and suddenly all the primordial qi in the surroundings came bubbling at me like a tide.

The Class teacher Guo Daoying and the classmates were at first astonished to see me going insane at the back of the classroom. When Guo Daoying wanted to stop me, she suddenly discovered that the classroom had begun shaking.

Guo Daoying face changed, and was frightened to the bottom of her heart: "Earthquake!" Suddenly her balance became unsteady, she ended up sitting on the ground. The students in the class were not much better, each and everyone was rolling on the ground. The entire classroom was in a complete disarray.

I was immersed in that fantastic feeling, I had assimilated with all living things in the world.

Animals are much more sensitive to the world's primordial qi compared to humans, so they are able to more keenly discern changes in the environment. Villagers working in the vicinity of the school were surprised to find that large swarms of butterflies looking like a

cloud of multicoloured flowers was moving towards Ba Jiao Primary School. Nobody knew what had exactly happened at Ba Jiao Primary School.

The butterflies poured into the classroom through the window, only to stick to the wall, on the glass, on the blackboard, on the ceiling, on the chairs, and even on people. The whole classroom had turned into a butterfly ocean.

However, I was completely unaware of any of this. I was still immersed in the jumping.

So much activity, had already alerted all the teachers and students in the Ba Jiao Primary school.

The primary school students squealed in excitement at seeing the butterflies flying about as far as the eyes could see. The teachers also exclaimed in astonishment. They also were not inclined to go and bother the merrymaking children. Unfortunately, in this age, and in such a small mountain village, people still don't carry mobile phones.

On the school roof, on the eaves, there were traces of butterflies everywhere. However, it was the classroom of the first grade where the butterflies were in the highest concentration.

Headmaster Mr. Han had come out of a classroom, he couldn't understand what exactly had happened.

The first grade's classroom was the most peculiar, all of the butterflies were engaged in life and death struggle to make it to the first grade's classroom. Mr. Han walked over, and saw an astonishing scene in the classroom.

“Quickly Stop !”

Just like a thunderclap, I awakened from the state of ecstasy. Looking around at everything in the classroom, I wasn't entirely sure what I had done.



# My Daoist Life - Chapter 4

## New Teacher

The incident I caused this time almost made my studies come to an end, it was only due to Grandpa's unrelenting persuasion, that Mr. Han finally relented.

It was reportedly said that, at that time Mr. Han had steeled his heart and was bent on kicking me out of Ba Jiao Primary School. Grandpa only said this one line to him, "In this village, there is no one who doesn't know what my grandson is like, if anything happens, don't regret it.

At that time Mr Han felt a chill down his spine and immediately changed his mind, allowing me to continue studying at Ba Jiao Primary School.

The students in class were all apparently fine. Unexpectedly, after being teacher-in-charge for less than a month, Gao Dao Ying applied for leave and from then on, the language and literature class was taught by the Headmaster Mr Han himself.

I was informed by Mr Han that during class, if i wanted to come just come, if i wanted to leave just leave, the only request he had was that there were no strange things happening in the classroom.

I understood the gravity of the situation, so from then on, every day during class, i would concentrate intently. The fact that my Grandpa had always wished for me to be just like a normal child, without getting picked on or making troubles, made me promise him that i wouldn't do any strange things within the school again, so i had to keep my word. As a result, I became even quieter. If it weren't for the fact that I read along when the teacher was reading out text, others would've thought that I had turned into an idiot again. It wasn't that I couldn't speak, it was that I chose not to speak. The things i had on my mind, weren't understandable by my classmates, and what they had to say was simply not interesting to me.

There was a shortage of qualified teachers in the village. In Ba Jiao Primary School, there were six grades and only six teachers. Every teacher had to play more than one role. For example, Mr Han was both the headmaster and the teacher-in-charge of the language and literature class for grade six and now he was also the teacher for grade one. Mr Han also taught science, and at times, he even had to take on the role of a physical education teacher(sports instructor / PE teacher whichever is better) or even teach music. If you said that I was being taught language and literature by the PE teacher you would be right, because Mr Han was substituting as the PE teacher for our class. Now that Guo Daoying was on leave, the Ba Jiao Primary School teachers were unable to handle the load.

After Guo Daoying applied for leave, he contacted his relations and transferred away. The

Ministry of Education sent over a female teacher that had just recently graduated from the teacher-training school.

The new teacher was called Lin Jing and she was very pretty. Having just graduated as a secondary school student from the teacher-training school she was also quite young. At the time that Lin Jing took over as our teacher-in-charge, she wasn't even 18. Although these bunch of brats hadn't yet matured, their love of beauty had already developed.

Except for me, the other 50 or so children in the class had all fallen for her. Even though I also had a love for beauty, I disliked the aura emitting from her body. The aura seemed to regard me as its mortal enemy.

"My name is Lin Jing, I graduated from Huang Yan Teacher-training School. I was also born in Qiu Mountain County so please do not treat me as a stranger." Lin Jing's voice was very pleasant, once she opened her mouth, the class of fifty plus mouths were immediately silenced.

"Do you guys have any questions?" Lin Jing gave the group of brats a chance to talk.

The always fearless fatty Huang Shulang who was always last in class reflexively blurted out, "Do you have a boyfriend?"

A little brat like you asking this sort of question, what meaning does it have? No matter how young she is, she's still from a different generation.

Except for me, once again, the class of more than 50 students all burst out laughing. This kind of vulgar topic, for someone as prideful as me, was not worth a chuckle – for I am a Daoist.

Lin Jing gave a lovable laugh and her chest heaving unceasingly, made me unconsciously take a few more glances. As a result of that, I discovered that around Lin Jing's neck hung an object, just like me. Only that I couldn't see what that object was. I took out the bronze medal that was hidden within my clothes and started to play with it.

"Teacher Lin. Huang Jingyang is playing with toys in class!" The big fatty Huang Shulang immediately reported to Teacher Lin.

Lin Jing immediately walked to my side, a trace of an unusually sickening and gloomy qi rushed forth towards me.

This trace of gloomy qi caused triggered the resistance of primordial qi within my body. That trace of gloomy qi gave me a feeling of discomfort, before immediately disappearing without a trace.

Lin Jing asked me in an extremely strict tone: "Why are you playing with toys during class?"

"This is not a toy. You also have one on your neck."

I was calmly facing Lin Jing's questioning, it would be natural for Lin Jing to add a label of mischievous in addition to troublemaker.

"Stay back after school."

Originally, the big fatty Huang Shulang would have been satisfied with me receiving a

scolding, he would rather be the person asked to stay back. It would have been good to monopolize Teacher Lin during that time. But now, that person had become me.

In order to make Teacher Lin change her mind, Huang Shulang after class was over, promptly went to teacher Lin to inform her about all the rumors about me. However, it didn't go in accordance to Huang Shulang's expectations. Since tender age, Teacher Lin had received an atheist upbringing. As far as Huang Shulang's words were concerned, it could all be summed up as feudalistic superstitions. Huang Shulang's wishful thinking did not succeed, and instead made Lin Jing become even more interested in me.

The children in the class took every opportunity to encircle Lin Jing completely, even when Lin Jing went to the toilet, a big group followed after in pursuit. With no other option left, she could only ask for help from Headmaster Han.

"Bastards! If you again dare to chase Lin Jing to the toilet, I will immediately cut off your JJ and feed it to the dogs!" Even though Mr. Hang acted as the Headmaster, he actually wasn't 'that' educated.

JJ possessing boys dispersed instantly, and Girls without JJs also got scared and disappeared, leaving behind no trace.

I tried to maintain as much distance as possible from Teacher Lin, that cold aura on her body had from the very beginning made me feel disgusted.

"Did you really manage to attract almost a hundred thousand butterflies?" Lin Jing after returning from the toilet, approached me from behind.

I didn't even need to turn back, I already knew that Lin Jing had come over. Originally I was thinking of escaping, however the brats all around had blocked my way.

I nodded, there is nobody in the Ba Jiao Primary School who doesn't know about this. So why would I deny it?

"How is it possible? Making mischief in the classroom is of course wrong, but it has nothing to do with butterflies. Butterflies are a natural phenomenon of the natural world. No matter what kind of chaotic dance you did that day, the flock of butterflies were here for some kind of a reason." Lin Jing said with a smile.

"It's true, Teacher, on that day he suddenly shouted and jumped. It was as if an earthquake had happened in the classroom, everybody in the classroom fell to the ground. Then the butterflies from the outside began rushing like crazy into the classroom." Huang Shulang said anxiously.

"Everyone listen to what I say, butterflies are a kind of natural phenomenon. Such meeting of butterflies has occurred in many places. We all must cultivate scientific knowledge from childhood and reject superstition." Lin Jing explained to the students very patiently.

Huang Shulang in order to prove his standpoint, also had an idea: "Teacher Lin, you can make Huang Jingyang jump once more to know. See whether he can attract butterflies or not!"

Unexpectedly, Lin Jing approved of Huang Shulang's approach: "En. student Huang Shulang said it right. To put into practice is the sole method of determining the truth.

Student Huang Jingyang, can you again try to jump like you did on that day to see if you are able to attract butterflies?”

I firmly shook my head: “No!”

Seeing me reject so firmly, Lin Jing was very surprised: “Why not?”

“Teacher Lin, Headmaster Han said, that if Huang Jingyang dares to jump again, he would have him expelled at once. The previous time Huang Jingyang managed to scare off Teacher Guo, and originally he was going to be expelled. Afterwards, Huang Jingyang’s Grandpa came to plead, and Headmaster Han allowed Huang Jingyang to stay. However, Huang Jingyang wrote a letter of guarantee.” The big fatty Huang Shulang definitely wasn’t capable of speaking for so long. The words spoken just now were by a girl in the class called Li Lijuan.

“Just because of this matter, Headmaster Han would expel Huang Jingyang? Isn’t this a bit too ridiculous?” Lin Jing opened her eyes wide.

“You don’t need to worry, I will take all responsibility. Whatever happens, I will persuade Headmaster Han.” Lin Jing said after a bit of thought.

I shook my head. I didn’t dare to jump, it was not because I feared Headmaster Han, but because I had promised Grandpa.

“Why?” Lin Jing didn’t expect that it would still be possible for a first grader to not listen to his teacher. However, I did not relent.

Huang Shulang secretly ran off and called Mr. Han to come over.

“Teacher Lin, you cannot let this child jump. It would lead to a mishap.” Mr. Han came over in a hurry.

“Headmaster Han, how can you be so superstitious. Butterflies are a natural phenomenon, they won’t come over because of some strange jumping and dance of Huang Jingyang. This point, you must all clearly understand.” Lin Jing said frowning.

“Teacher Lin, you believe in science right. However, aren’t there some supernatural phenomena? This student Huang Jingyang is a supernatural phenomenon. You have been here for only a short time, you don’t know much about student Huang Jingyang. As time goes on, you will also slowly come to know. This strange dance, he cannot be allowed to jump at any cost. Huang Jinyang, do you remember the guarantee you gave me? If you dare to do the strange jumping dance, I will expel you immediately!”

In face of Mr. Han’s resolute opposition, Lin Jing’s scientific experiment came to nothing.

Lin Jing was not a person of Chang Mountain village, but rather belonged to another village in the Qiu Mountain county. So far away from home, she was forced to live in the school.

In a village school like Ba Jiao Primary School, naturally the teachers’ dormitories were not that up to par. Within each classroom was a separate room, it acted as both an office and as the teacher’s living quarters. Ba Jiao Primary’s previous teachers were all from Ba Jiao village. After school they would return to their own homes. Headmaster Han cleared out a room and gave it to Lin Jing as her living quarters.

The primary school was built on Ba Jiao village's communal ground, and was a distance away from the village. Moreover, it was built on the hillside, when night came it became extremely eerie.

Headmaster Han was worried about Lin Jing living on her own so he allowed the students from her class to take turns and stay behind at night to keep her company. In any case they were only in the first grade, there was no need to worry about the differences in gender.

Huang Shulang was beside himself with joy, everyday he counted down the number of days till it became his turn. To Huang Shulang, who consistently scored a zero for maths, this was basically a mathematical olympiad question.

I really disliked the aura coming from Lin Jing's body and was extremely afraid of the day that it would be my turn.

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 5

Accompanying Teacher to sleep.

As it was Lin Jing's first time being the teacher-in-charge, her sense of responsibility was especially strong. Other than weekends, every afternoon she would pay a visit to the homes of her students. Carrying a black notebook, she meticulously recorded down the living situations of all her students.

Because my situation was the most special, naturally she arranged for me to sit near the front.

During an afternoon of Lin Jing's second week at Ba Jiao village when class had just ended, Lin Jing gave an announcement to the class :” Tonight it's Huang Jingyang's turn to stay behind and accompany me.”

If it had been any of the other little brats in my class they would've started jumping in excitement but i knitted my brows and frowned. This wasn't a good assignment.

In the afternoon Lin Jing wanted to go to my home to pay a visit even though she knew that my parents had gone to the southern part of the country to work. “Huang Jingyang, is your grandpa at home?”

“He's home.” Even though I wasn't too happy, I had no choice but to tell the truth.

Grandpa was extremely excited that Teacher Lin had come to visit his house. Our home had two chickens, now we only have one. It was at this time that I thought to myself, isn't this Teacher Lin using the excuse of visiting homes to freeload?

“I've already eaten my lunch.” As if she knew what I was thinking, Teacher Lin declined to sit at the table. However she was unable to refuse Grandpa's kind hospitality so she ate a bit, quickly putting down her chopsticks after that, instead she put quite a bit in my bowl.

“Huang Jingyang, you're still growing so you should eat more.”

It was at this moment that I suddenly felt that Teacher Lin actually wasn't that cold.

On our way back to the school I asked her a question, :” Teacher Lin, you ate so little, could it be that you are sick?”

Actually I was referring to the gloomy and cold aura emitting from her body.

“I'm fine, if a woman eats too much, her figure won't be good. “ Teacher Lin said smilingly.

As a farmer's son, who always lacked food and clothes, it was hard for me to understand the meaning of keeping in shape. Even now, it was impossible for the villagers to have

meat at every meal. Unless they were like Huang Shulang's family, who had a butcher.

To me, the homework for first graders wasn't even a little difficult. Teacher Lin, who had originally wanted to guide and assist me, discovered that she had nothing to do.

"Huang Jingyang, you're so smart, in the future you must definitely go to a university."

The concept of going to a university was nonexistent within the minds of the village children, since the victory of the communists over the nationalists in 1949, Ba Jiao village had never produced a single university student.

"What can I do after going to university?" I asked puzzledly.

"If you study in a university, in the future you can go to the city to work and earn a lot of money."

"My parents have never studied in a university, they're also working in the city, they can also make money." After thinking about it for a while, there were still questions within my heart.

"If you study in a university, your job will be more relaxed and your wages will be higher, what's more, you will be able to be registered as a resident in the city. " Dealing with this difficult-to-fool student gave Lin Jing a bit of a headache.

At night before we slept Teacher Lin asked me to turn around, when I looked back she had already changed into a pair of pink pajamas. I almost thought that she was the same as me and knew Dao techniques, the type that allowed her to change her clothes in the blink of an eye.

Knowing that I was to accompany Teacher Lin at night, Grandpa had let me take a bath in the afternoon and made me wear a singlet. Unlike at home where I would just strip and get into bed.

The singlet was unable to cover up the bronze medal and it was noticed by Teacher Lin. At the time when Huang Shulang had tried to complain about me playing with my medal, I had managed to hide it back within my shirt and it wasn't noticed by Teacher Lin.

"Was this bronze medal given to you to wear by your parents?" Teacher Lin asked curiously.

I shook my head, "I picked it up in the mountains."

"Picked it up in the mountains? Can I have a look?" Teacher Lin was even more surprised.

Even though in my heart I wasn't willing, I took off the medal and handed it to Teacher Lin.

After looking at it for a while, Teacher Lin naturally couldn't see anything suspicious about it, so she gave it back to me.

Seeing me stare at her neck, Teacher Lin smiled and took down down a red cord from her neck and revealed an object from beneath her clothes.

It was a piece of jade, but it was dark green in colour. Its design was simple, and the engraving on it was done meticulously with a rich luster.

I barely managed to keep myself from throwing the jade away. This was because I knew that the cold and gloomy aura on Teacher Lin's body was emitted from this piece of jade. Teacher Lin's face reddened :” It was given to me by a friend.”

“A friend? Where did this jade come from? Because of my nervousness, it seemed as if I was interrogating her

“Little children shouldn't ask so many questions, it isn't polite, do you understand?” Teacher Lin said firmly.

“No... What I'm trying to say is.... “ What I had originally wanted to say was that there was a problem with this jade, but knowing that Teacher Lin would not believe me. I didn't continue talking and resentfully returned the jade to Teacher Lin.

Teacher Lin carefully wore the red string around her neck and put the jade within her clothes. From her actions, one could tell that the person who gave her the jade must've been extremely important to her.

Even though I felt very uncomfortable about the jade, there was nothing that I could do. Luckily I only had to accompany her for one night and my task would be over. “All I have to do is sleep one night.” I thought to myself.

That night, I dreamt of Teacher Lin. In the dream Teacher Lin had been captured by a person shrouded entirely in black. Teacher Lin kept shouting at me to save her> However, regardless of whether I tried to dance the strange dance or send out primordial qi, it was useless against that person. Abruptly waking up, I realised that I was holding Teacher Lin's jade within my hand.

The jade's gloomy and cold aura had already disappeared, changing to a gentle feeling within my hands. However I quickly released it, I had no good feelings about this jade.

Teacher Lin slept very soundly, I closed my eyes and also fell asleep very quickly.

“Wake up, Wake up.” I didn't know how long I had slept, Teacher Lin shook me to wake me up. Believing it to be dawn, I opened my eyes to look, but it was still night.

“It's not even dawn?” The glaring lights in the room were making me unable to open my eyes.

“I want to go to the toilet, you stand up and accompany me.” Teacher Lin said somewhat embarrassedly.

Ba Jiao Primary School's toilet's were old fashioned hole type bathrooms, because of being so shameful they were set up some distance away from the classrooms. It didn't matter during the day time, but if going to the toilet in the evening was a bit inconvenient. Very few people live in the school, and it doesn't even have street lights outside, and there is no electrical wiring to the toilets. Teacher Lin took a flashlight, and I followed.

It was pitch-black outside, Teacher Lin unexpectedly found it embarrassing to make me wait outside the toilet. Actually, she was also afraid of going to the toilet alone.

“You come inside with me. Help me by holding the flashlight.”

Of course, as I went inside, Teacher Lin made me stand with my back to her. I took a look



at the structure inside, and it was actually missing a peeing region like the men's room. I was actually puzzled in my mind as to where did the girls pee.

At this time, I heard some xisuo sounds coming from behind me, which immediately answered the questions I was having in my mind just a moment ago.

I also didn't know what else to think of at the moment, I was actually in such a filthy place, there's no presence of the worldly primordial qi in this place. It is only plainly obvious, how could such a place have worldly primordial qi?

Ba Jiao Primary School can be quite terrifying in the night. Noises of dogs barking could be heard coming from the distant village. From time to time, several short and long birdsongs could be heard coming from the mountains. However, these kind of voices in the night would make cold sweat go down your back.

Teacher Lin's hands were somewhat trembling, as she tightly held on to my hands. Only after the school gate was closed and left behind, Teacher Lin heaved a sigh of relief.

"Teacher Lin, just a moment ago, did you see something?" I asked.

Teacher Lin jumped in fright: "Where's what thing. It's too dark outside. I've always been afraid of the dark since childhood."

This time, I slept until dawn broke. I got up, put on my clothes, then ran towards home.

"This Child, How can you just pick up your trousers and not even acknowledge others?" Teacher Lin pulled me back.

"I need to go back to let the ox graze, also need to make breakfast." Since I woke up from my coma, I had slowly taken over all the house chores. Letting out the Ox, collecting firewood, cooking meals and doing the laundry, had slowly been taken over from Grandpa's hands. Teacher Lin is a city person, naturally wouldn't understand the realities of the life of a peasant boy who has to handle the responsibilities of the household.

Seeing me come back, the Ox in the pen cried out loudly.

"Moo, Moo....."

I walked over, and took down the stopper. The Ox immediately rushed out from the cattle pen, and began arching its body to get petted by me.

"Go Graze." I shot some Primordial Qi into the Ox's body with a pat.

The Ox immediately happily ran off into the distance.

The tether from the Ox's nose had long since been removed, because it no longer had any utility.

Grandpa had already gone to work the fields, I quickly began making breakfast.

Breakfast was ready by the time Grandpa came back from working the fields.

"YangYang, has your teacher Lin had breakfast or not?" Grandpa asked while grabbing the food for eating.

"She should have eaten in the school cafeteria."

After this time, I had originally thought that it would take a long time for it to be my turn again. Who knew that only after two days, Teacher Lin at the time of dismissing class announced: “Huang Jingyang, you will accompany me for the night.”

“Why me?” I scowled. On the day after I had accompanied Teacher Lin, I discovered that the trace of cold and gloomy aura on her body had returned.

Huang Shulang was counting down the days waiting for his turn, but he shouldn’t expect much, after all, who would be willing to let a pig \*\*.

“Teacher Lin, hasn’t Huang Jingyang’s already had his turn?” Huang Shulang obviously didn’t realize the point.

“This is not a public distribution of food.” Teacher Lin said with a smile on her face.

Huang Shulang had a very dismayed expression on his face. I understood that for Huang Shulang, this was probably his once in a lifetime opportunity to even get close to a beautiful woman.

“I have been suffering from nightmares, but I didn’t have them on that night with you.” Teacher Lin told me the reason, at night time.

When I had gone to sleep in the night, unexpectedly I again had that weird dream, and again grasped Teacher Lin’s Jade pendant within my hands.

I managed to wake up again in the middle of the night. Suddenly, I condensed Primordial Qi within my hands and slapped it into the Jade pendant fiercely.

“Ah!”

A blood-curling scream sounded out, that Jade pendant had turned from its originally somewhat pitch-black colour to dark-green.

I wasn’t sure what had happened but I knew that whatever had been hiding in the jade had been dispersed by my primordial qi. I could no longer sense that uncomfortable feeling.

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 6

## Teacher Lin's Boyfriend

When I woke up in the morning, Teacher Lin was already dressed and was sitting at the desk checking homework. Seeing me wake up, she smiled and said: "Woke up, ah?"

I nodded my head, then got dressed.

Knowing that I had to return home and do my chores, Teacher Lin hurriedly squeezed an object into my hands. After walking out I took look at it, and it turned out to be a caramel treat. This was something I had eaten during the time of new year celebration. Thirteenth Uncle had brought a small box for me when he came to visit for the new year's greetings. It tastes very sweet.

Early in the morning, the Primordial Qi in the world was very active and vigorous, and walking on the mountain roads, the mind becomes especially clear. The dogs in the village have never barked at me. However, the villagers had already become accustomed to seeing such strange sights associated with me.

After returning home, the first task is to take the Ox out of the cattle pen. My family's Ox's body is quite clean. In the cattle pen, the dung is piled up on one side, and the rice straws on the ground are stacked up on the other side. My family's ox surprisingly loves to stay clean. Nobody in the village paid any attention to this point. However, what made the villagers feel surprised was that my family's Ox, while grazing on the ridges between the fields, did not eat the rice crops and only ate the straws.

When it was time for taking breakfast, Grandpa returned from outside, holding a small puppy in his hands.

I was after all a seven-year old kid, with a particular love for puppies: "Where did it come from?"

"Do you like it?" Grandpa seeing me so happy, a smile piled up on his face.

"I definitely like it." I nodded firmly.

"In your Great Grandpa's house a dog gave birth not long ago. I have already spoken to him about it. It is not even a month old, but when I held him, he had the biggest teeth I've seen on a dog (Male Dog)." Grandpa sat down at the table, waiting for me to serve him the food. After that I also served food for myself and then ate it together with my grandpa.

"I am thinking of raising fish in a pond, we can raise some mudfish. This way we can eat fish whenever we want to. During New Year's time, we would also be able to sell them and get some money." I said while looking at the pickles on the table.

“Can’t afford to raise them. The electrical fish machine is too expensive. We won’t be able to stay and guard.” Grandpa shook his head helplessly.

“I will raise this puppy, and after its big I will make it guard the fish pond.” I said earnestly.

“If you want to rear then do it. Anyways, the pond is lying empty. Where are you going to get fish seeds from? Do you want me to buy some for you?” Grandpa asked.

“No need. I will go to the river and bring back some to rear.” I said after a bit of thought.

“Childish talk.” Grandpa laughed a bit and did not take it seriously.

After school was over, I began putting my plan into action. Mudfish are somewhat easy to obtain, one can even just dig a ditch for a few. However, this is the era of the ubiquitous electric fishing machine, which has become a scourge for the posterity of mudfish in the field ditches. I can only hope that my puppy can just hurry and grow up quickly. Otherwise, it will not be able to safeguard the pond fishes.

This puppy seemed to have a particular fondness of sticking to me. It would immediately run over to wherever I would sit, constantly rubbing his body against my leg. Treating it similar to the Ox, I condensed some primordial qi and directly patted it into the head of the puppy.

The puppy is a black dog, I gave it the name “Black Bean”. After that in order to be fair, I also chose a name for the Ox, calling it “Old Yellow”.

The weather was clear, the temperature was still a bit high in September. However, the water was still cool, so bathing in the river was not a big problem. There was a rocky riverside beach not far from the village. Lots of fish like to hide beneath the stones at the rocky beach. The villagers often go there to fish. However, at present there are fishing machines aplenty, so the fishes in this area are already scarce. Sometimes, even after waiting for a long time, they wouldn’t be able to even touch a few.

I had a half-filled bucket set aside, and then looked under each stone one by one, for fish. However, even after looking for a long time, I couldn’t find even one. Unexpectedly, when I finally found some mudfish, they ran away. If it continued like this, then i would still have caught nothing, even after it got dark.

I was frowning and worried, whereas Black Bean jumped around cheerfully. Every time I would reach out to a mudfish, it would bark at the water for a long time. However, it did not dare go into the water, and could only jump from one stone to another.

Seeing Black Bean hopping from one stone to another, my eyes shined, and I also began treading on the beach with weird steps, while chanting from my mouth a, o, e, i, u, ü.

Almost instantly after I began jumping, those hua la hua la sounds could be heard coming from the water. A shoal of long and stout fish whooshing through the water moved at a very fast pace. It was as if they had heard a summons.

I stopped at once, and at a very fast speed began putting the shoal of fish into the bucket. Not long after, the bucket was filled up.

“Fish crossing! Fish crossing!”

Huang Shulang while pulling along an Ox saw me from afar. Seeing the shoal of fish shuttling back and forth on the beach, he shouted immediately in a loud voice.

I had once heard the adults talking about the phenomenon of fish crossing. Nobody was aware of what actually caused the fish crossing, but every time there was fish crossing, the river would become densely packed with large shoals of fish concealed within the dark-green river water. The only thing visible everywhere would be densely packed fish mouths.

Grandpa once told me that he had met a youth a while back who could directly use the wicker basket to catch fishes from the river.

Hearing Huang Shulang's shouts, the villagers came running over at a lightning speed, however they had come a bit late. By the time they arrived, most of the fish had disappeared and only one or two stupid fish had gotten stuck in some disorderly heaps of rock leaving them unable to know where to run.

"Huang Shulang, you are a dead fatty, where is this fish crossing in the end, eh?" A big Elder said while slapping hard Huang Shulang's buttocks.

"Crossed, Crossed, Huang Jingyang also saw." Huang Shulang said while pointing towards me.

Only now did the villagers realise that there was a bucket of fish by my side. But none of them dared come over to ask me. Seeing me here, without a word, the villagers left one by one.

Grandpa rushed over, solving my biggest problem. I was basically unable to lift the bucket full of fish. Even though I was the evil of the village, my strength was still just that of a seven year-old's.

Black bean held a little fish in its mouth, treating it as a toy and played with it. Seeing me returning home, he was a little unwilling to part with it, tightly holding it in his mouth.

"Are you really going to raise these fish in the pond?" Grandpa asked while carrying the bucket. Grandpa must have felt that with such a big bucket full of fish, rather than putting them in the pond and rely on the providence of Heaven, it was more of a benefit to put it in their bellies.

"En." I nodded my head.

That night, I still had to accompany Teacher Lin at the school. Teacher Lin's suitcase was like a Bowl of Myriad Treasures, there were always yummy things to eat inside it. To someone my age, the allure of yummy food was greater than that of the worldly primordial qi.

The worldly primordial qi hidden in my body seemed to be nurturing the dao seed, causing it to germinate. I could feel it slowly growing, but was unable to tell what benefits it brought.

The next day, an unexpected guest arrived at the primary school. It was a young man about Teacher Lin's age. He was very handsome, however, I really disliked him. There was a smell coming from his body that I could not stand. I could also see a dark qi

entwined around his entire body.

Seeing Cui Chenlin, Teacher Lin became extremely happy, causing the entire class of little brats to suffer broken hearts. Teacher Lin excitedly stopped the on-going class and rushed outside.

“Why did you come?” Teacher Lin sounded as if she was floating.

“Are you wearing the jade pendant I gave you?” The man’s voice was slightly gloomy.

“I’m wearing it, look.” Lin Jing didn’t notice that the man was extremely fixated on the jade pendant.

Taking hold of the jade pendant and seeing that the dark qi had dimmed, he could not help but frown.

“What’s wrong?” Lin Jing was baffled by the man’s cold attitude.

“Have you given this jade pendant to anyone?” The man ask Lin Jing gravely

The little brats in the classroom all crowded around the window, peeking outside. I paid close attention to the man, when he held Teacher Lin’s jade pendant, my heartbeat suddenly quickened. I was extremely worried that he would discover my existence. He was very dangerous for me.

“I haven’t, I’ve always worn it around my neck, Why? Is something wrong?” Lin Jing asked baffledly.

“Nothing’s wrong.” He immediately shook his head.

I breathed a sigh of relief.

The man held Lin Jing’s jade pendant within his palm. I clearly saw him inserting some dark qi into the jade pendant. This dark qi was much more dense compared to what had previously been in the Jade pendant. Had this man’s strength improved?

I don’t know why, when the man turned his head to glance in my direction, also didn’t know if he was even aware of my existence, his eyes were just too terrible, just looking made my heart feel as if it had been dropped into a ten thousand fathoms deep abyss.

“Wear the Jade pendant properly. No matter what, don’t let the others see.” The young man urged.

“Chenlin, why are you always so concerned about this Jade pendant? I think that your concern over the Jade pendant is even greater than your concern for me.” Teacher Lin said somewhat discontentedly to her boyfriend.

“No, never, you are thinking too much.” The man shook his head.

The man ate lunch and left. Teacher Lin was not that happy about it. I saw that when Teacher Lin walked into the classroom, there were traces of tears. Moreover, that cold aura on Teacher’s Lin’s body which always made me feel unusually uncomfortable had also somewhat increased.

What kind of a person is he exactly? What is that dark qi that was twisting around his body? Why did he insert dark qi into the jade pendant worn by Teacher’s Lin?

Several questions arose in my heart. Unfortunately, I had no place to ask the answers.

As a result of the events from the beginning of the term, nobody in the class dared to sit on the same table as me. Therefore, I monopolized a whole table by myself. Huang Shulang also didn't dare reveal my secrets, because that would only result in giving me more opportunities of contact with Teacher Lin. Especially now that Teacher Lin had grown accustomed to making me accompany her every night.

However, at night I didn't dare to use primordial qi again to dispel the dark qi from Teacher Lin's Jade pendant. Although the dark qi within the jade pendant had become even more dense, it couldn't hurt me no matter what. Under these circumstances, with me present the dark qi had no option but to stay holed up in the jade pendant.

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 7

Golden Haired Monkey

However, the cold qi in the jade pendant was making me feel uncomfortable. Therefore, I was not able to sleep well that night. Since, I didn't dare displace the jade pendant, the cold qi on the jade pendant was making me worry endlessly. I don't know what time I finally fell asleep, however Teacher Lin woke me up early next morning.

"Huang Jingyang, why were you not able to wake up today, ah? Did you do some mischief in the night?" Teacher Lin smilingly looked at me.

"I did not touch your jade pendant." I had a guilty conscience. Which I had a hard time hiding as a seven year old child.

Teacher Lin's heart moved, as she took out the jade pendant, and glanced at it. She shouldn't have been able to know about the jade pendant's matter. However, listening to my words, she must have surely recalled what her boyfriend had said earlier.

"Is there anything wrong with my Jade pendant?" Teacher Lin had a suspicion that I knew something.

"Nothing." I was a bit flustered, "Teacher Lin, I need to return to set loose my Ox."

I walked home barefoot, having left behind slippers in Teacher Lin's room.

Grandpa hadn't gone to work this morning. Farm work was only now and then, it was not something that needed work done every day.

"What are you so flustered for? Could it be that you have done something bad?" Grandpa teased me.

"I, I didn't do anything wrong. I woke up late in the morning. I am just afraid of being late for school." I defended myself.

I had pinned the hopes of my future onto a half a mu big fish pond, so the thoughts of the fish pond were quite heavy on my mind. After taking out the Ox, I ran over to see the fish pond. I also didn't know what to feed these fish. Having seen other people throw grass into fish ponds, that were eaten up by the fish, I also scrounged up some fresh grass and scattered them into the fish pond. Conveniently, a strand of primordial qi was also shot into the grass which involved barely an effort.

[TLNote: Chinese "Mu" is a unit of area <http://www.convert-me.com/en/convert/area/cmu.html%5D>

"Foolish child, the fish you are feeding are not grass carp, you threw fish grass....."



Grandpa's words were cut off abruptly, because he saw that in the fish pond the various fish that I had captured were frantically eating the grass. Through all my life, afraid it was the first time that saw such a strange phenomenon. In any case, anything touched by me is unlikely to be normal.

Grandpa shook his head and walked towards home.

"Grandpa, should I continue to feed them grass?" I asked somewhat puzzled.

"Go on." Grandpa said from afar.

Now that Grandpa had permitted to feed, then fed they shall be. In such a big fish pond, just a bucket of fish didn't feel like enough to me. So I simply went again to the river beach during the afternoon time, and brought back some captured fish.

Black Bean had been playfully running behind me. I turned out my pockets to find some pieces of candy but there was no meat bone. I dismayingly took a chunk of candy and gave it to Black Bean. However, I didn't think that a thing that was held great interest for me, would attract no interest from it. It just licked it once in his mouth and unexpectedly, didn't even taste it again.

"Stupid Dog, don't you know that the taste of sweets is good?" I turned to look at that piece of candy for quite a few seconds, and eventually returned without picking up that candy. No matter what, we are still Daoists. How the hell could we be picking up candy that dogs had eaten.

Today is Friday, this is a kid's most favourite day, because studies last for only the first half of the day, and the afternoon is straight up holiday. Teacher Lin also goes back home on Friday. At last, I also need not go to school. In the afternoon, I prepare to go into the mountains to chop firewood.

With my small body, I am not able to bring heavy firewood on my back. However, this was not that difficult for me. I had Grandpa make two wicker baskets and fixed them on the Ox's back. I also carried a small bamboo basket myself. I would not be able to bring back great trees from the mountain, but it was still possible for me to pick up deadwood from the mountain. The picked up firewood was enough to burn for a couple of days.

All the village brats avoided me from a distance, naturally no one would go along with me up the mountain. I did not speak about my experience during the two years, not having a playmate also didn't bother me. After lunch, I took along Old Yellow and Black Bean and walked towards inner parts of the mountain.

Even though the village children were warned by their parents to avoid me, I could see it in their eyes, their envy of how I was able to train my ox and puppy to be so obedient.

Autumn had already embellished the verdant mountainside with red and yellow colours, golden pine needles lay spread on the floor softly like a carpet, red maple leaves swayed from the trees flames flickering in the wind up and down. Wild Persimmons were hanging from the treetops like small lanterns. The changing seasons always left a faint trace of a clue for me. Allowing me to touch the marks left by the passage of time.

A pine cone came roaring at my face, fortunately I managed to dodge quickly, but not fast enough as it left behind a small mark on my head. Rolling over on the ground, I cut a sorry

figure.

“zhizhi, zhizhi.....”

Not far away on the mountain side, atop a pine tree, a monkey covered in golden fur was laughing merrily.

If the Lord suffers, the Subjects die. Seeing me suffer such humiliation, my two generals flew into a rage immediately.

Old Yellow roared out a moo angrily.

Black bean also started barking incessantly following its lead.

I picked up a rock from the ground and threw it hard in the direction of the monkey. How could I possibly afford to lose.

However, the rock didn't fly far, as it plummeted down before rolling along the ground a few times to eventually return back to my side.

The Golden haired monkey had initially jumped in fright, but upon seeing that the rock thrown by me was soft and weak, it immediately startled laughing rampantly and once more counter-attacked with a pine cone.

Furiously, I picked up a pine cone, some primordial qi had inadvertently been condensed into my hands. That primordial qi enveloped the pine cone and the instant I threw it, the pine cone flew screaming towards the monkey.

“zhizhizhizhi.....” The Golden haired monkey thought that this attack of mine would also lose steam half-way. However, who knew that this time the pine cone didn't show any signs of slowing down, and instead flew even faster before abruptly hitting the golden haired monkey's forehead who had closed its eyes out of fear.

“Peng!”

The Monkey fainted on the spot, and dropped straight down from the tree. Fortunately, the bush was dense and it cushioned the blow of the monkey's fall. At last, it ended up on the ground covered with thick pines. The golden fur and the dead golden pinewood leaves, thoroughly mixed together.

I promptly ran towards the monkey, with my two generals immediately following behind.

The monkey was lying motionlessly on the ground, i thought that the monkey had fallen to his death. Black Bean by comparison was quite fierce, as it ran up to fiercely bite the monkey's tail. I also wondered whether the milk teeth of the puppy would have problems biting down or not. However, who could have imagined that the monkey at once jumped up. With eyes full of a look of grievance looked at me as if I was a villain. The monkey screeched and threw itself towards me. Apparently, it was looking for revenge. Old Yellow rushed up and kicking out with its hooves directly sent the monkey flying for about twenty feet.

The monkey, having suffered total defeat, naturally had to fiercely reprimand us for not following Jiang Hu's way of righteousness and morality. It ran away at once after finishing the scolding.

I am but a child, naturally I would not talk with a monkey about the righteousness and justice of Jiang Hu. The only regret was that I couldn't find the means to make the monkey submit. Maybe I should have slapped some primordial qi into it, but I don't know if it would immediately bow down to me like Old Yellow or Black Bean.

[TLnote: Jiang Hu is basically the world of Martial Arts. And if we believe traditional Wuxia novels, there is a "Way of Righteousness and Morality" followed by practitioners of martial arts.]

I spent several days in regret for this reason.

With Old Yellow's help, I was naturally able to return home with a full load. The wicker baskets loaded onto Old Yellow were full of dry branches and dry pine cones. In addition, I had brought back some wild persimmons. Ready to be brought back and stored in the barn.

Furthermore, there was a stretch of woods that was from a place where the villagers had always warned children not to go. The bronze medal on my person had been picked up from that place only. At the moment, I was able to feel that stretch of wood's obscurity. My two generals seemed to be extremely cautious towards that stretch of wood. While passing through that stretch of wood, I discovered that the hair on black bean's body were pointing straight up, while he was somewhat trembling and Old Yellow kept breathing roughly.

I was also somewhat nervous, as I tightly clenched the bronze medal hanging at my neck. I had a feeling as if this bronze medal were trying to fly away from me.

It was already getting late, even if I had been able to comprehend the mysteries of heaven and earth, I was still just a child and I was still afraid of the dark. The comparatively empty areas in the forest were more likely to darken. There were shadows everywhere, I could feel my heart beat thumping as my pace became faster and faster. Black bean with his short stature was unable to keep up and began to anxiously bark from behind. I had no option but to stop, but I was anxious that the golden haired monkey would take advantage of this opportunity to come over and take revenge.

The golden haired monkey had suffered a major loss, but it didn't appear in front of me again. I didn't know if I would have another opportunity to capture that golden haired monkey.

Grandpa was sitting in the courtyard waiting, and seeing Old Yellow carrying two packs full of firewood, immediately came over to help.

"Look at you child, it's already so late in the day, don't you know that should have back come a little earlier. If you had run into a tiger in the interiors of the mountain, what would you have done." Grandpa tried to frighten me.

"We are here but where's the tiger, ah. Wolf, Wild Boar and what not, all haven't been seen by anybody since so many years." I was definitely not afraid.

"Hurry up and undress, wash yourself in the bath, see how much you are sweating, you must not catch a cold." Grandpa had already boiled some water.

"This is nothing. This little bit of sweat, it will dry up in a short while." Even though these

words were coming out of my mouth, I had already stripped, and after pouring a bowl of hot water on myself, I began scrubbing thoroughly to wash my body clean. Compared to other children, I was more fond of cleanliness. This was because I could clearly feel the filth on my body brimming with an aura I very much disliked.

“Grandpa, the millets have all turned yellow, did Papa and Mama call back yet?” Having finished bathing, and putting on clean clothes, I sat down by the side of the kitchen fire cooking the dinner.

“Your Papa and Mama are so busy, having to work overtime everyday, how could they have the time to call back? The telephone charges are quite hefty, don’t you know? Even going to pick up a phone call from the village branch clerk’s house would cost 1 Yuan.” Grandpa tried to find a pile of excuses, but in fact had inadvertently let me know that Papa and Mama hadn’t called back.

I realized it as soon as I heard it, so I could only feel somewhat dejected. In the kitchen, there was only the sound of the firewood cackling in the stove. The flames flickered, and my tender silhouette was also flickering in the night.

In the dimness, the flames in the stove transformed into little twinkling stars within my eyes. It was of course the fire attribute primordial qi. Each and everyone of them had an explosive disposition, but so long as they leapt out of from the flames, they would very quickly vanish into the air.

I tried to attract the fire attribute primordial qi into my body, but found that this type of primordial qi was exceptionally hard to control. The primordial qi on the bronze medal has eight different forms, but between these eight forms, they could be combined into countless number of permutations, making up the myriad objects between heaven and earth. However, I am not yet able to control even one of them.

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 8

## Plans to make money

Worldly Primordial Qi can also be flamboyantly colourful. I was slowly discovering that primordial qi has a lot of different colours, and they all have different temperaments. For instance, the primordial qi within this fire, its temperament is comparatively quite violent and hot tempered. It also resembles someone who can't be trifled with. I wanted to contain it inside my body but it was not even the least bit obedient, as difficult to tame as an unruly cruel steed.

Only the primordial qi possessing white gem like luster feels the most obedient, however, soon after entering my body, they also leave quickly. At the same time, they also take away the impurities present within the my body's organs.

"Overcooked, Rice is overcooked. Look at you child, where did your thoughts wander off while cooking?" Grandpa hurriedly said.

Only then did i notice the faint smell of the rice congee burning. At once I quickly covered the fire within the stove with ashes.

"You also can't blame your Papa and Mama. That Guan Dong is not a mountain of Gold and Silver. Earning even a little bit of money is not easy for your parents. Also, there's nothing like civilized work, all they can do is enter a factory and do physical labour to survive. Working more than ten hours a day. In these two years, your parents have exhausted their hard earned years worth of savings. At first they were planning to return to renovate the house into two stories. However, now with your younger brother, I don't know in what year the matter of the house renovation will be completed." Grandpa said sighing.

"Grandpa, I don't blame them. I know that they have been working hard. I haven't seen them in several years. I also miss my younger brother." I could feel the tears forming around the rim of my eyes. With great difficulty I managed to suppress them and tried to not let them not. The blazing fire of the stove within my eyes became hazy.

I had a sudden urge to make money, if I could earn lot of money, then perhaps Papa and Mama would come back, and would not need to continue toiling so hard to make money. Also, I would be able to see my younger brother. At this young age, I also knew the value of money.

I began deliberating, calculating all of the means of making money that I possessed. If more fish were raised and sold during the New Year's time, then I should be able to earn a lot of money. But, perhaps not enough, last year, the fish pond in Great Grandpa's house had been bought for nearly a thousand yuan. It was still less than my parent's monthly

salary in Guan Dong.

Perhaps I can also raise cattle, in any case the cattle can go graze on their own. A head of cattle would be able to make several thousands of yuan. Oh that's right, we can also raise pigs and chickens. My plans were becoming more extravagant.

"Grandpa, how about we raise a few heads of cattle. We could sell one head of cattle for a few thousand yuan. Also, we could raise a few pigs. All of this would be managed by me. I would go buy pig straw, I would come feed the pigs. Also we can raise chickens, ducks and geese." I told Grandpa my ideas.

"Can't raise cattle. Calves are too expensive, Grandpa doesn't have that much money. Raise pigs, ok. Chickens, Ducks, Geese can also be raised. However, if they eat other people's millets then we will have to compensate them." Grandpa said a bit worriedly.

"I won't let them eat other people's millets and vegetables. They will only eat insects." I said after thinking for a bit,

Grandpa wanted to say something, but glancing over at the ox pen, he stopped before saying what he wanted to say.

"Then tomorrow you'll come with me to the market to buy a couple of piglets to bring back. You can also bring back some chicks, ducklings and goslings. However, you must remember that these animals that you are bringing back will be your responsibility to manage. Raising them is fine, but remember that your body is in its growth stage, you must also eat well." Grandpa said while tenderly caressing my head.

"Raising animals can bring money, and as long as I make enough money, Papa and Mama will come back. Younger brother will also come back." I said firmly.

"Ai!" Grandpa let out a sigh and went out.

There were always many people on the streets of Chang Mountain town every day, with most of them concentrated in the trading areas. Grandpa took me to the place where young animals are sold.

"I pick this chick." I reached out to grab a chick from the chicken peddler's chick cage.

"Hey! Whose child are you, if you kill a chick you will have to pay." The peddler said reluctantly.

"Just let him pick by himself, I will pay for the damages." Grandpa said.

I grabbed a chick from the cage, that chick was surprisingly simple and obedient in my hands.

"Look at you kid, you seem to have a knack. Picking up all of my best young ones. Also seem to be seasoned at grabbing chicks. How did you teach this child." The peddler said in a very surprised manner.

"I don't know." Grandpa shook his head, but on his face was a proud smile. Back home, nobody in the village had responded to my unique insight, but here I had suddenly become a treasure. Grandpa was naturally feeling happy.

"Come here, Uncle will give you a couple." That peddler very rarely added another head

for the benefit of the customer on his own accord.

Twenty chicks, twenty ducklings and twenty goslings, were very quickly bought. My face was full of smiles, as if I could already see the scene of Papa and Mama returning home for the new year. Grandpa knew what I was thinking, but still he was worried that I was holding too many expectations, and if my parents still don't come back, I would be extremely disappointed. Grandpa knew that my Papa and Mama's thoughts were completely devoted onto my younger brother. They had already forgotten that they had an elder son.

"We also need to buy two piglets." Grandpa, carrying the load on a shoulder pole, took me along to go to the place where piglets were being sold.

Buying piglets may not be as easy as buying chicks, ducklings and goslings.

All kinds of people mingle together as piglet vendors, there are some specialist peddlers who go to their villages to collect piglets, there are some villagers who come to towns to sell piglets carrying them on a shoulder pole. One would also have to be careful when buying piglets, since one might end up taking home a piglet diseased from birth which would even possibly die after not many days of being raised. Even if the piglet bought is not a diseased pig, there is a big difference between first-rate pigs and inferior pigs. Within the same litter of piglets, after one month the difference would already be several jin, and if one continued to raise them for a few more months, then the difference would be a few tens of jin usually. This emphasises insight.

"I will choose." Just like before, I eagerly rushed over to choose piglets.

"That won't do, better let your Grandpa choose." Grandpa was worried that I would choose wrongly.

"I will choose them well." I wasn't sure why, but with a glance at these piglets, I was capable of discerning which piglets were good, and which piglets were inferior.

Grandpa who couldn't go against me, could only let me choose, "Ok, go ahead then."

I settled on a villager who seemed like he had come from his village carrying three piglets in a snakeskin bag.

"I'll take these two." I said.

"That won't do. Buy all three together, if you bought these two big ones, whom will I sell the leftover to? If you can't afford the price, then that's not my problem. You must not discriminate this young piglet, in fact it is comparable to the other two pigs. If you compare it with piglets from other people's houses, it is not the least bit lacking. My house's sow is not ordinary. The piglets that it gives birth to are all good for raising. There were twelve born in this litter. Very early in the morning itself were picked out by my village people. Originally, these three were also reserved for someone. As it happened their family had to suddenly move out to take up casual jobs. I also wasn't given any notice of it. I rear a lot of animals, so at once I was forced to come to town holding these three piglets so they could be sold." That villager was around fifty years of age.

"Grandpa, how about we buy it also." I had settled on these three little piglets. This piglet in comparison to other piglets seemed to be much more intelligent. It was a kind of hazy

feeling, making me decide to buy these piglets.

That piglet seller was also very frank and straightforward, directly waiving off the leftover change, which was several yuan.

What I didn't know, was that during this trip, Grandpa had spent almost all of his accumulated savings. This money had come from Grandpa doing odd-jobs in other people's houses. However, at this time he had completely used up all that money because of me.

"Yang Yang, do you also want to eat anything?" Grandpa asked.

I looked at the roadside shops full of goods tinkling like pendants. The snacks on the roadside stands were also sending out an alluring aroma. I couldn't help but gulp down a mouthful of saliva. However, I firmly shook my head: "I'm fine."

"Heh Heh" Grandpa smiled.

A book stall on the roadside unexpectedly caught my attention. The book stall had new books on display, as well as second-hand used books. All books had their own marked prices, some books were very cheap, and some books were very expensive. This is because, in the 80s the book's marked price remained very low, but in the 90s, the books started becoming very expensive.

I saw a book called 《Xing Yi Quan Five Fists Illustrated》. The book had a marked price of only 5.5 jiao, however the book stall was selling it for the price of five yuan. It was mainly the book's cover that was making me very interested. The 90s was a period of time when martial arts were revered.

[TLNote: For more info as to why I kept the name of the book like that [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Xing\\_Yi\\_Quan#Five\\_Element\\_Shapes\\_.28W.C7.94\\_X.C7.94.29](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Xing_Yi_Quan#Five_Element_Shapes_.28W.C7.94_X.C7.94.29)

Note2: One jiao is basically a tenth of a yuan]

"Five Yuan, and you can take it away." The stall owner looked at me glancing, said.

"Doesn't it have only 5.5 jiao written on top of it? You also don't have to sell so expensive, how about two yuan?" My Grandpa seeing me taking a liking to it, at once wanted to buy it, but the money he had brought along today had been almost completely exhausted. A few yuan were remaining, but he still wanted to buy me something to eat. The trips to this street are seldom, nevertheless he wanted to buy something for me to wet my mouth.

"It's a book from the 60s, was originally worth only a few fen. Now even the waste paper can be sold for more than a few fen right? Three Yuan, take it or leave it." The stall owner seeing an old man with a child, discounted two yuan.

[TLnote: fen is basically one-hundredth of a yuan, and one-tenth of a jiao]

Grandpa took out a plastic bag from his pocket, it was Grandpa's wallet. From the wallet he took out three yuan. Already not much money was left inside.

With the book in my hands, I had already lost interest in the street food stalls on both sides of the road. Immediately opened the book, but unexpectedly, I couldn't recognize most of the characters inside. I could only keep on turning the pages, before finally turning to the



place where there were illustrations.

It would sound strange to say, these illustrations seemed as if they had become alive within my mind, as I turned page by page, the person within the illustrations in the book seemed to be performing a continuous sequence of movements, and as I turned to the last page of the book the routine of the person finished. This routine in the next moment was recorded within my memory. I could freely demonstrate that routine at any time.

“Come, eat a sugar steamed stuffed bun. You will need the energy to walk.” Grandpa slipped me a steamed stuffed bun. I didn’t immediately eat it. First I looked around and saw that Grandpa didn’t have one in his hands.

Grandpa only bought one steamed stuffed bun. The rest of the money, Grandpa was preparing to keep as reserve.

I broke the steamed stuffed bun into half, and handing one half to Grandpa: “We each eat one half.”

Grandpa took the bun before turning his head to use his hand to wipe his eyes.

“Grandpa, as soon as I become rich in the future, we will go onto the streets and eat whatever we want.” I took a small bite out of this half a steamed stuffed bun with my small mouth, while wanting to make the white sugary sweetness within the steamed stuffed bun persist in my mouth even just a little bit longer.

“Ai Ai, then Yang Yang properly raise these animals, so that once these chickens, ducks, geese and little pigs all grow up, we will become wealthy.” Grandpa nodded incessantly.

Earlier when Grandma was at home, our family would raise pigs every year. Therefore, a pig-pen was already available. The chicken, ducks and geese are still too young, and can only be raised in pots.

After returning home, I at once told Black bean that he must guard these little chicks, ducklings and goslings well.

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 9

## Show of Strength

Teacher Lin arrived at Ba Jiao Village during the weekend in the afternoon. This was because she had to take class on Monday, so she had to come a day early to catch up with work.

Teacher Lin did not dare sleep alone in the school at night, so she came to my house to ask me to come over in the night and accompany her. Teacher Lin's look was somewhat pale and sallow. I realised that she probably hadn't been sleeping well in these last two days. This was because I could sense that the aura of the jade pendant she was wearing was even gloomier and colder than before.

But also, Teacher Lin's request put me in a difficult spot, because at home there was a major cluster of chickens, ducks, geese and added to that, three black and white identically patterned pigs. "I am feeding a lot of ducks and chicken at home"

Teacher Lin was also in a tough spot, because when I accompany her, she is able to have a smooth and steady sleep. Ba Jiao Primary School is really too remote. She doesn't dare to live alone for even a single night in Ba Jiao Primary School.

"Can I come live in your home? I would pay your family rent and living expenses for each month. Is that acceptable for you or not?" Teacher Lin asked Grandpa. [TLNote: The 'You' used here is courteous version and not informal]

"We don't need any rent. It's just that the life of our household is a little difficult, so it's fine as long as you do not despise the life of our household for being in such a terrible state." Grandpa naturally couldn't accept Teacher Lin's rent and living expenses.

"Then, hereafter I will stay in your home." Teacher Lin came to a decision.

Grandpa and I quickly went to tidy up a room for Teacher Lin. Although our house only has four rooms, at the moment, Grandpa and I were the only ones living here. Naturally, there would be a spare room.

After tidying up the room, I went along with Grandpa to go to Ba Jiao Primary School, for shifting Teacher Lin's beddings and other articles together to our home.

Hearing that Teacher Lin had come to live at my house, all the village brats who had never dared to come to my house, couldn't help but come by.

Huang Shulang was envious to the point of death: "Teacher Lin, how could you come live at Huang Jingyang's house. Their family's house looks like it's about to collapse, whereas our family's house is a magnificent pavilion. Teacher Lin, you might as well come live at my home. My father is a butcher, there would be meat to eat every day."

“Huang Jingyang’s house is very good ah, Teacher will live here only. If you all have any questions, you can come later to Huang Jingyang’s home.” Teacher Lin said smilingly.

Even though I disliked that aura on Teacher Lin’s body, and also somewhat feared Teacher Lin’s boyfriend finding our home, after what Teacher Lin said to that big fatty, it made me feel quite happy.

In order to celebrate Teacher Lin coming to live at our home, I decided to go to the river to pick up some nice ingredients. My house doesn’t have a fridge, from the chickens that were being fed in the house, only one was killed at the time of Teacher Lin’s home visit. For the remaining, Grandpa said that they could be left to be used during the Mid-Autumn festival celebrations. Grandpa was going to borrow some eggs from the village.

“I am going to bring some fish back home.” I said.

Grandpa hearing what I said, nodded.

“Want me to come with you?” Grandpa asked.

I shook my head: “I will be taking Old Yellow for help.”

Grandpa helped me in securely tying up the casks on the ox’s back, while I carried a plastic bucket myself.

“Huang Jingyang, I will come along with you.” Teacher Lin said very interestedly.

I was somewhat hesitant, because the way I catch fish is somewhat shocking.

Grandpa was also worried that Teacher Lin, after seeing how I catch fish, would look at me differently, “This Ox has a bit wild temperament, and it’s easy for someone to get hurt, Teacher Lin has just arrived, it’s better to have a nice good rest at home.”

Teacher Lin, who supposedly hadn’t slept well in these last two days, coupled with the long ride so far, let out a yawn: “Ok, Huang Jingyang, you be careful.”

Upon reaching the river beach, I again repeated my old trick. Large shoal of wild fish forming a large group rushed into my pre-deployed trap. I had to use up all my strength to put a 6-7 jin fish into Old Yellow’s cask. This was me, when the fish didn’t struggle even the least bit in my hands, otherwise I simply couldn’t have done anything to hold that 6-7 jin fish steady.

A few fish of small and large sizes were grabbed and put into the cask, filling up both of the tied up casks to the brim. I slapped Old Yellow’s ass. Old Yellow immediately ran towards home excitedly.

Black bean and I chased after while gasping for breath.

After we left, the fish inside the trap again broke out into the river. The villagers, knowing that I had captured the fish in such a peculiar manner, wouldn’t dare come over pick from the readily available.

Except for that six-seven jin great black fish, the other fish were put into the fish pond.

“Was this fish caught by you?” Teacher Lin was finding it somewhat hard to believe her eyes.

“Not fished, it was captured.” I said unperturbed, even feeling a little bit happy within my

heart.

“Captured?” Teacher Lin somewhat accidentally looked at my tiny body, and wasn’t very convinced. If the fish were to be lifted up, then I would fall short of it.

“Is it Delicious?” I asked.

“Very delicious.” Teacher Lin nodded.

“If you enjoy it, then in the future I can catch fish for you to eat every day.” I said conceitedly.

Black Bean was extremely responsible and diligent regarding my instructions. Aside from eating, he was also incessantly guarding the chicken, ducks and geese. If only these chickens, ducks and geese could be even a little bit obedient, instead of constantly running around the house. Black bean is kept constantly busy, rushing to bark at those chicks who are not obedient. The chicks scared of black bean scatter in all directions, after that black bean would also run around the whole house, rushing to herd all those scattered escaping chicks together.

“This puppy is really intelligent.” Teacher Lin was almost instantly captivated by Black bean.

“Absolutely stupid, not even the least bit intelligent.” I was extremely dissatisfied with Black bean. Because this fellow had almost stolen my thunder.

While going to bed at night, Teacher Lin said to me, “Huang Jingyang, I am somewhat afraid of going to sleep alone at night, I always have nightmares, every time you accompanied me, I was able to sleep well. Can you accompany me while sleeping?”

“If you don’t wear the Jade pendant you won’t have nightmares.” I couldn’t help but say.

“Jade pendant?” This was already the second time Teacher Lin was hearing about the matter of the Jade pendant. She must also be recalling that she started experiencing nightmares in the night around the time she had started wearing that jade pendant. Therefore, regarding my words she was already in somewhat half-believe and half-doubt state.

Teacher Lin took out the jade pendant from her bosom, I was astonished to discover that the jade pendant had already turned into an almost pitch-black colour. It seemed as if it was capable of absorbing all light.

“Why?” Teacher Lin looked at me. Wanting to hear my explanation.

“This Jade pendant is getting darker and darker.” I said while pointing to the jade pendant.

“Man raises Jade. Is it it not normal for the colour to change?” Teacher Lin asked.

[TLNote: Apparently there is a chinese saying Man raises Jade, Jade raises Man, which means that person by wearing the jade puts his impact onto the jade, and the jade by being worn puts its impact onto the person, the respective impacts differ based on interpretations but basically they affect each other by staying close to each other]

[Robin: Remember guys, this is a SCHOOL TEACHER, who thinks a jade randomly changing colors is normal xD]

I didn’t know what kind of a principle ‘Man raises jade’ was, but I could feel that cold and

gloomy aura hidden within the Jade pendant.

“The jade pendant, is very cold. Is disconcerting.” I said.

Teacher Lin’s face changed, clearly she had also felt these sensations while sleeping.

“What should I do?” Teacher Lin was obviously anxious to the point of passing out, unexpectedly forgetting that I was only a seven year old, first grade student.

“Why did your friend give you this Jade pendant?” I asked.

“He didn’t say, he just said that this Jade pendant suited me. However, from the day I put on this Jade pendant, I have been having nightmares incessantly. At first I thought that it would be better to come to a rural environment for a bit of change. Did not expect the situation to take a turn for the worse.” Teacher Lin said.

“Why not give the Jade pendant back to him?” I asked baffled.

“I.....” Teacher Lin was clearly in somewhat of an internal conflict.

During the night I accompanied Teacher Lin to help her feel better. However, as it was my own home, I slept very peacefully in the night. Teacher Lin also slept very soundly.

Because the fish were being raised, and the pigs had to be fed, moreover the chicks, ducklings and goslings were being raised, I got up very early in the morning. The fish grass also had to be bought, I also had to fetch pig fodder, and also needed to feed chicks, ducklings and geese. I hurried about alone without rest. Grandpa didn’t interfere in these things. Perhaps he also had some doubts regarding this plan of mine.

I didn’t even have enough time to practice from the secret martial arts cheat manual that Grandpa bought from the town for three yuan.

Breakfast was quite simple compared to yesterday, to the point that Teacher Lin had adapted relatively to the insufficiency. Because Teacher Lin was living in my home, the Ba Jiao Village’s first grade brats, had been emboldened enough to run up to our house and walk alongside Teacher Lin to the school.

I didn’t like the noisy whisperings of these people. However, Teacher Lin straight up pulled me along with her to go to school.

“Huang Jingyang, you need not become proud of yourself, I have already talked to my Papa, about letting Teacher Lin stay in our home for a few days.” Huang Shulang didn’t like my prideful look.

By the time classes got over, I was bored senseless, and at once, in accordance with the illustrations in 《Xing Yi Quan Five Fists Illustrated》, began performing the entire set of movements. Some movements were indeed a bit tricky. Unintentionally, I set into motion the primordial qi stored within my body. With the use of primordial qi, those comparatively difficult to perform movements became simple.

The spiritual qi within the world began to flood inside my body while I was shadow boxing, it was as if it had opened a new Dao for me.

Different movements are able to attract different attributed primordial qi types. Different types of primordial qi enter different locations within the body. I didn’t intentionally guide them, these primordial qi types easily found the places where they had to go on their own.

The more I struck out the more excited I became, but in the eyes of others, my actions were very ugly. Even uglier than the Eighth set of Radio Calisthenics. I had become the laughing stock for all the teachers and students in the school.

[TLNote: For more info, Wiki is your best friend[https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Radio\\_calisthenics%5D](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Radio_calisthenics%5D)

Headmaster Han ruthlessly beat a copper sheet hung in the cafeteria with a hammer, with ding dong sounds echoing from each strike. Teachers and Students at once returned to the classrooms. However, I was immersed in Xing Yi Quan Five Fists, and didn't hear even the slightest bit of sound.

Mr. Han walked right next to me and suddenly shouted: "Huang Jingyang, what are you doing?"

I turned a deaf ear, which made Mr. Han fly into a rage. He walked towards me as he was in the midst of preparing to directly push me down, he didn't expect that as soon as he came into contact with my body, a mishap occurred.

I suddenly moved, my body was like a strong bow which had been abruptly plucked and Mr. Han who had just come into contact with my body was thrown tens of feet away just like a bag of straws.

As Mr. Han's butt landed on the ground, the rage that was filling his heart had completely vanished, and within his heart there was only fear, and out of fright his face had become somewhat cyan.

"Headmaster Han, what happened to you?" Teacher Lin hearing Headmaster Han had been calling out my name loudly outside, and seeing that my seat was vacant, she came outside. However, looking at Mr. Han sitting on the ground, she promptly came over to quickly help him get up.

"Nothing, I just accidentally slipped and fell." Mr. Han took advantage of the opportunity to stand but covered up the events that had trespassed.

"Huang Jingyang, what are you still doing here?" Teacher Lin called out to me.

I stopped shadowboxing dazedly, I had no idea what had transpired just now. Grasping my head, I at once walked towards the classroom.

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 10

Papa, Mama and Me.

Teacher Lin also didn't know what had happened. She simply thought that I had been playing wildly, and thus didn't hear the bell that announced the classes.

The sensation from shadowboxing was making me feel invigorated, it seemed that every action was affecting the worldly primordial qi which I could sense with exceptional clarity. More importantly, those types of primordial qi, which on ordinary days would be exceptionally unruly, and as difficult to tame as a noble steed, seemed to have been dulcified when I was shadowboxing, as they voluntarily entered my body.

"Could it be that I have the ability to become a Martial Arts Master?" At that time I didn't know what Dao Cultivation was, and within my mind the position of a martial arts master was already a very high.

"Huang Jingyang, if you are able to study a bit harder, and obtain good results, and are able to pass the university entrance examination, then you would be able to move out of this mountain village of yours. Don't you really want to go to the big cities? Pass the university entrance exam, and you will be able to go to a big city." Teacher Lin seemed to understand perfectly what I desired.

I dreamt of going to the big cities, because I wanted to live together with Papa and Mama everyday, and also to be able to watch my younger brother grow up every day. Just like the other children in the village.

Dogs never dislike their owners for being poor, a son can never despise his mother for being ugly. Even though my parents hadn't come back to see me over so many years, I never felt even the slightest resentment towards them. I always thought that they had done nothing to me, and that the mistake was all mine. Therefore, I wanted to try hard to make money, and when I then had made a lot of money, they may notice me. I would also be able to go to the big cities. This was because I had heard from Thirteenth Uncle, that going to GuangDong is very expensive. I didn't know that in fact there was no need to buy a ticket for myself at this age.

"Doesn't attending a university cost a lot of money?" I blurted out.

Teacher Lin didn't know why at such a young age, I would be able to think of such a complicated issue, perhaps it was because children of poor families begin taking charge of the household early.

Women are always sentimental. Teacher Lin's eyes turned red as she looked at me, some tears were also seemingly beginning to form in her eyes: "First let's return to the classroom."

Teacher Lin finished speaking walked quickly towards the classroom. I thought that I might have said something wrong which made Teacher Lin angry, so I, somewhat perturbed, nervously followed Teacher Lin into the classroom.

“Today, we will be talking about families.”

“In this class, each one of us will be talking about our father and mother, and also about yourself. One at a time.”

During this class, I began to understand the students around me. Originally I had thought that I was the most unfortunate kid in the world. However, while listening to the introductions given by these classmates, I realized that there were people even unluckier than me in this world.

Classmate Li Lijuan’s father had died of illness, and her mother had remarried, now she was living with her Grandma and Grandpa. They were also not well, their family was even unable to keep the pot boiling. While she was talking, she started crying, following which even the other students in the class started crying.

[TLNote: Unable to keep the pot boiling is an idiom which means they don’t have any food/are on the edge of starvation]

Teacher Lin hadn’t anticipated this at all. Originally, to avoid dwelling on unpleasant things, she had wanted to start a class on parent-child relationships, but did not expect that it would become a class on family grievances.

I thought about myself, even though my parents hadn’t come back to see me in a long time, seemed to have forgotten the new years and birthdays, and also seemed to have forgotten about me, they were still alive. Inevitably, there will be a day, when they would remember me. Compared to Li Lijuan, I felt I was several times more fortunate.

There were a lot of parents who had gone out for many years, and hadn’t returned back ever since.

When it was my turn to speak, I very indifferently said: “My Papa and Mama, in order to make money, haven’t returned home these past several years. I have been living with Grandpa in my home. Life is quite good.”

Resultantly, the big fatty Huang Shulang immediately jumped out: “Huang Jingyang is lying to everyone. His Papa and Mama have given birth to a younger brother, so they don’t need him. He lives along with his Grandpa at home, and he doesn’t even get to eat meat.”

[Robin: This little fucker....]

To Huang Shulang, eating meat is happiness, and him eating just like a pig, is naturally a symbol of wealth.

“Student Huang Shulang, do not interrupt other students. Everybody has a different understanding of happiness. Some people, even while living a life of luxury, feel sad, while other people eating mustard for three meals a day, can feel happy. Happiness is not gotten from eating good food, or wearing good clothes. This age of you all is the age of enjoyment and growth, Teacher also hopes that you are also able to cherish everything around you. Study hard and in the future show a lot of filial love for your close ones.”



Teacher Lin was feeling that it was time to end this episode of grievances that she was already unable to control.

However, student Huang Shulang still hadn't given an account to everyone of his happy life of eating better than an emperor and sleeping sounder than a pig.

"Teacher Lin, I haven't spoken yet."

Teacher Lin was already in a bad mood. Girls' mood is always fickle like the weather. She snapped at classmate Huang Shulang: "Today we'll stop the family topic here, later, when we have time, we will continue again."

Therefore, Huang Shulang scowled miserably, in the whole class only he didn't get a turn. Teardrops looking like string of pearls kept falling down towards the ground.

Later on after a while, classmate Huang Shulang was still obsessed with his leftover turn. Constantly inquiring from time to time from Teacher Lin: "What time will we continue?"

My life had fallen into a set routine. Every afternoon, I returned home along with Teacher Lin and helped her carry the thick bunch of homework. Teacher Lin had become a part of the family. There was a time, when she and I went to pull out hogweeds. Amongst the villagers there were very few people who pulled out hogweeds. They all fed their pigs with pig fodder. However, the pig fodder was very expensive, with one pack costing two hundred yuan. Grandpa had already used up all his money one time this year. I did not want to see him look embarrassed. In the hogweed, I put some rice bran and also put in some boiled porridge.

Grandpa was beginning to worry. If not even the least bit of fodder is fed, pigs would grow slowly, however what was strange that my family's pigs didn't look even the least bit dissatisfied. Having fed the pigs a week or so, they had already began putting on airs. While eating, they would all fight ferociously. As if those hogweeds I was feeding, were like some kind of heavenly delicacies.

I often looked at those three spotted pigs eating, and would think: Huang Shulang should look like this while eating dinner, right?

With regards to the Chicks, Ducklings and Geese, I made some superficial changes, but did not deviate from the original plan, and similarly used finely cut hogweed, adding to it rice bran and corn porridge. They also jumped for joy similarly.

Grandpa had raised me as a grandson like this, slowly succeeding in melting my heart.

Actually, I also had my own tricks, as I knew these domestic raised poultry and livestock were all fond of primordial qi. Every day as far as possible, I would insert some primordial qi into their food. Although at first I had thought that the primordial qi wouldn't stay in these meals for a long time, I didn't think that it would turn out to be very effective.

But Grandpa attributed these variations in these poultry and livestock to boil down to my strangeness.

Every day when I returned home, Black bean would always come welcome me from very far away, but he would always just pounce on me, always ignoring Teacher Lin. This made

Teacher Lin jealous.

“Black bean, come to me! I have snacks here.” Teacher Lin’s last resort tricks also didn’t work. The attractiveness of her snacks was much smaller compared to the attraction Black bean felt towards me.

If Teacher Lin continued to entangle, then Black Bean would immediately begin barking in protest.

“Huang Jingyang, how is it that Black Bean likes you so much?” Teacher Lin grumbled.

“Is Black Bean like me? I am not a dog.” I said dissatisfiedly.

“Heh heh. That’s not what I am saying. I am saying, pfft.” Teacher Lin herself was also unclear, and couldn’t help but giggle, trembling incessantly from head to toe, making me look somewhat blankly.

“What are you looking at, stinky brat.” Teacher Lin straightened her clothes, thinking that she had exposed herself.

The thoughts of an adult are always complex. At that moment I was just thinking, that if my Mama were home, and she were to be laughing, then she ought to look just as beautiful as Teacher Lin.

In the night, after finishing with the homework, with great difficulty I had managed some spare time. However, Teacher Lin called me to her side.

“Huang Jingyang, you see you are so good-looking, but the words you write are so ugly. Starting from today, you must practice calligraphy. Start practicing calligraphy with the Ink brush.” Teacher Lin said.

[TLNote: Ink brush [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ink\\_brush%5D](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ink_brush%5D)

Since Teacher Lin had told me to practice calligraphy, calligraphy I shall practice.

I took out my bronze medal, I had always thought that there were some depictions of things, seemingly looking like characters, then I brought the bronze medal to Teacher Lin for her to see: “Teacher Lin, Are these characters on top of it?”

Teacher Lin nodded: “This is seal script. A very ancient calligraphic style.”

[TLNote: Seal Script: [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Seal\\_script](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Seal_script) ]

“Can you tell me how to write this kind of characters?” I asked. This bronze medal, from my point of view, was just like a mystery. It had completely changed my life and I wanted to be more clear about actually what kind of a thing it was.

“I can. However, you must first complete the ink-brush writing practice everyday. Only after that will I teach you how to recognize seal script, and as soon as you are able to recognize all of it, I will teach you how to write.” Teacher Lin herself did actually not recognize this seal script, much less was she able to write it, so before teaching me, she had to first know herself and then she would teach me.

There was an additional reason for me wanting to learn seal script, it was when I looked at the bronze medal, I would always feel that there was some close connection between the characters in the pictures. However, I was unable to write, so this kind of connection I could only feel, I was unable to distinctly appreciate it.

As there was a woman in the house, there was always someone who would ask me to take a bath every day, so from the day that Teacher Lin came to live at our house, my body remained much cleaner, even the clothes on my body very rarely got dirty. I had become Ba Jiao Village's cleanest child.

Teacher Lin's jade pendant was always a major concern on my mind, as even my house's poultry and livestock disliked that aura on Teacher Lin's body, and would maintain some distance at all times from her.

Whenever I would come, the poultry and livestock would immediately surge in, surrounding me in a circle. This was not only because I had to feed them everyday, but also because they very much liked the aura on my body. However, as long as Teacher Lin appeared, they would immediately flee.

Teacher Lin was a very careful woman, and she soon discovered this point: "Why are these animals afraid of me so much?"

I wanted to speak but stopped.

"Because of this Jade pendant?" Teacher Lin was also clearly aware of the problem.

I nodded.

"Why?" Teacher Lin asked.

"It's scary. They can feel it." I said.

"Is it also because of this Jade pendant that I continue to have nightmares?" Teacher Lin proceeded to ask.

I once again hesitated before I nodded.

Teacher Lin's facial expression became somewhat unwell, she could already feel that her boyfriend was in a wrong place.

"Why do you know?" Teacher Lin asked curiously.

"Because I am abnormal." I lowered my head, and pursed my lips after speaking. I was not really willing to say this in front of others.

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 11

## Taking Action

I don't know if it were because of our previous dialogue, but she didn't go back to her own place for about an entire month. She even spent all her weekends with me and Grandpa. Since she didn't have much else to do, she had plenty of time go out buying things for grandpa and I on the streets. In the village when a meat merchant came, she also shelled out some money to buy a couple jin meat. So, I didn't have to wait till new year or birthday celebration in order to get to eat meat.

I fell in love with shadow boxing, as long as I had spare time during the day, I would practice shadow boxing. A single big punch, was able to make me feel comfortable from head to toe. On the days when I am unable to shadowbox, I would always feel that there was something missing.

"Huang Jingyang, you are practicing kung fu everyday, are you thinking of becoming a martial artist?" Teacher Lin asked me one day.

What did I know of Martial Artists? I actually didn't want to become a martial artist, it's just that recently, I have been feeling a faint sense of danger slowly approaching. I didn't know where the danger was coming from, but this sense of danger would sometimes make me have nightmares while sleeping. Waking up surprised and full of sweat.

I knew that that jade pendant had a lot of trouble attached to it, sooner or later, a day would come when that Teacher Lin's boyfriend, Cui Chenlin, would discover my existence.

A person with that kind of aura is destined to be a mortal enemy of mine. I had already realized it on that day when I saw Cui Chenlin. His aura made me feel suffocated. However, I knew that there would be a day, when I would end up facing him directly.

Although I didn't get rid of Teacher Lin's Jade pendant, I instead kept constantly protecting Teacher Lin from being affected by its aura.

At the village entrance, there was a tree of osmanthus flowers, the flowers were in full bloom, with their fragrance spreading to over ten li. Of course, for a child of my age, the osmanthus fragrance was a reminder that the Mid-Autumn Festival was coming. Eating mooncakes in the Mid-Autumn Festival. This was a once in a year occasion, when children would eat them heartily. However, this didn't mean much to me. In the previous years, Grandpa would go buy a few mooncakes. However, this year, the money inside Grandpa's coin pouch was not even enough to make ends meet. Moreover, after the Mid-Autumn festival comes the time for Autumn harvest, which always involves quite a bit of expenditure.

These several days, Grandpa had been looking everywhere to find some work, and make

some money, but at present there were not many opportunities to earn a livelihood in the village.

“Grandpa, shall I go capture some fish to take to town for selling?” I thought of a way to make money.

Actually, I had already thought about it, however, now was not that good of a time to sell the fish compared to raising them in the fish pond and waiting till new year’s time before selling. Moreover after being raised for several months in the pond, they would also have grown a bit and when the new year’s time comes, the price that they would fetch would be better. However, I could see that Grandpa was short of money at the moment.

“Don’t.” Grandpa had always felt that my way of fishing was a bad idea.

“Uncle, You need not worry about the Mooncakes for the Mid-Autumn Festival. I have been eating and living in your home for so long, without any effort. Living like a freeloader everyday. I find it embarrassing.” Teacher Lin came forward. She was an attentive person. She had already made out the abnormality of just me living with Grandpa.

“How can that be okay. You spend your money everyday for buying groceries, how could we spend your money on this festival celebration?” Grandpa shook his head again and again.

“Uncle, no need for such formalities. If you disagree, then I wouldn’t dare live here from now. You don’t need to treat me as an outsider, please treat me the as if I were Huang Jingyang’s Aunt.” Teacher Lin said promptly.

In the end, Teacher Lin spent the money and bought a lot of food, and also a box of mooncakes. This was the first Mid-Autumn Festival, where I got to eat so sumptuously.

Teacher Lin came even closer to our family, and all the more reason I couldn’t let that Jade pendant harm her.

With the fall harvest, the golden yellow rice ears had all been turned into baskets filled with golden coloured rice crops before being moved into the barn. For my chickens, ducklings and goslings, this time could also be considered to be a sumptuous festival for eating. After the rice was harvested, there were countless insects and worms in the paddy field, which had become a grand banquet for them.

The Spring was for sowing, and Autumn was for harvest, this kind of seasonal rotation, and the world climate changes, apparently unknowingly made the seed residing somewhere within my body sprout even faster. I knew that there would come a day, when this seed would come out like a seed planted in the ground sprouts out.

The everyday boxing training was making my body stronger, and my skin was becoming fairer.

“Huang Jingyang, how come your skin is becoming whiter and whiter? Your skin is even whiter than Teacher’s? If you were a girl, you would definitely look very pretty.” Teacher Lin said while toweling my hair after my shower. Only now did I discover that my skin had become so unexpectedly fair. It was completely different from the other children in the village of the same age.

My face turned red, getting caressed continuously by a girl, would always make a man feel embarrassed.

After returning from school, Teacher Lin would teach me five seal characters, and till date had taught me more than a hundred characters. I was already capable of recognizing all the characters on the bronze medal.

The words on the bronze medal were: Qian (乾) for Heaven, Kun (坤) for Earth, Zhen (震) for Thunder, Xun (巽) for Wind, Gen (艮) for Mountain, Dui (兑) for Lake, Kan (坎) for Water and Li (离) for Fire.

[TLNote: Basically the Eight trigrams are eight letters symbolizing something and the whole thing is quite symbolic in Daoism and you could either see <http://www.wuxiaworld.com/what-dao-heck-a-very-basic-primer-to-the-dao> Or [http://www.nationsonline.org/oneworld/Chinese\\_Customs/bagua.htm](http://www.nationsonline.org/oneworld/Chinese_Customs/bagua.htm) For Information on Eight Trigrams/Bagua]

Although I was able to understand the meaning of these words, the form of these characters and the design atop the bronze medal instead suddenly stunned me to the core. In an instant, I had unexpectedly comprehended the true meaning within the seal characters. Heaven, Earth, Thunder, Wind, Mountain, Lake, Water and Fire, seemingly I could already vaguely catch the somewhat intrinsic connection between these things.

At that moment, I had a faint feeling of standing on the border between this world, and a brand new one, but it was sadly slightly too far away. Getting close to this border would always be hard for me.

“Huang Jingyang, what is going on with you?” Seeing me fall into dullness, Teacher Lin promptly used her hands to shake me.

I also didn’t know what exactly had happened in that instant, I just scratched my head and again looked at the table below. When I saw the seal script letters written by Teacher Lin, although I could easily read them, there was none of that spiritual charm I had seen on the bronze medal.

“You must be sleepy. Nevermind, you have also accumulated too much fatigue today, so we will end today’s practice earlier than usual, so go to bed early. If children don’t get enough sleep, then it can affect their growth.” Teacher Lin tidied up the things on the table. After that, she picked me up and went towards the room.

“Teacher Lin, if in the future you get married, will you still sleep with me or not?” I asked dazedly.

Teacher Lin laughed with a pfft sound: “Then how about Teacher Lin marry you?”

“Good.” I readily agreed.

“ge ge, you don’t think Teacher Lin is too old?” Teacher Lin was feeling very happy, and a seldom seen smile was on her face.

“Teacher Lin is not old. Everybody in the village says that you are very beautiful.” I was muddle-headed and in dire need of sleep. The events that happened a moment ago had exhausted me extremely.

I stumbled onto the bed dazedly, and after that undressed tremblingly. Teacher Lin said while sighing: "Look at you, young adult, so sensible, but actually you are still a child. You even want to take Teacher Lin as your wife. Ought to be beaten."

However, Teacher Lin didn't hit me, and instead planted a kiss on my cheeks.

At night, I had a strange dream. I dreamt that Teacher Lin's boyfriend Cui Chenlin had come and snatched away Teacher Lin from me.

I said: "Teacher Lin is married to me. Later she will also sleep with me. I forbid you from harming her."

Cui Chenlin laughed grimly: "I am not only going to take away Teacher Lin, I shall also kill you!"

I woke up crying. This time, Teacher Lin also woke up because of the noise.

"Huang Jingyang, what happened?" Teacher Lin felt really hurt seeing me cry, and promptly switched on the lights, knowing that I had had a nightmare.

"Teacher Lin, you must not go along with your boyfriend, he will harm you." After having finished speaking, I again laid down on the bed and fell asleep.

The next day when I woke up, Teacher Lin had already gotten out of bed.

I promptly wore some decent clothes and went out to look, only to see Teacher Lin sitting on a stool in the courtyard, staring blankly at the Jade pendant in her hand.

After eventually mustering up my courage, I said: "Teacher Lin, you must not wear that Jade pendant, it will harm you."

"When I am living in your house, why don't I get nightmares?" Teacher Lin asked.

"Because of me. I can prevent the Jade pendant from hurting you." I told the truth. I had already started considering Teacher Lin as a part of the family. Of course the talk of marrying Teacher Lin was just childish talk. At this time, I naturally knew nothing about what marriage was.

"Because of you." Teacher Lin still found it hard to believe. Although she had a vague suspicion.

"See this." I grabbed the Jade pendant from Teacher Lin's hands, condensed a strand of Primordial qi, and suddenly shot it into the Jade pendant.

"Ah!"

A wretched cry came out from the Jade pendant.

Teacher Lin fell down onto her rear out of fright, after quickly standing up, she looked horrified at the Jade pendant in my hands.

This time, unexpectedly I wasn't able to wipe the Jade pendant clean from the dark qi like the previous time, so again I gathered a strand of primordial qi and once more shot it into the jade pendant. After repeating this several times, the dark qi within the jade pendant was finally eliminated completely. After finishing, I handed over the Jade pendant back to Teacher Lin.

“You see, originally this Jade pendant was translucent. Due to filthy objects entering it, it had turned black. It will hurt you!”

Teacher Lin somewhat dreading, took the jade pendant from my hands. This time, the jade pendant had turned completely dark green. Holding within one’s hands, the smoothness and roundness of the jade stone could also be felt. Moreover, it also didn’t give off gloomy and cold aura upon touch like before.

“Why? What is the purpose of this?” Teacher Lin muttered to herself. She was clearly feeling very deeply hurt. How painful it was to be hurt by someone whom you were prepared to entrust your entire life to.

I didn’t know how to comfort Teacher Lin. I wasn’t able to understand the affairs of an adult after all. I just did not want Teacher Lin to feel heart-broken, I could only imagine her being taken care of by her family and loved ones.

I had slightly forgotten, that solving the problem of Teacher Lin’s jade pendant, would instead provoke an even more troublesome problem.

I had at first thought that Cui Chenlin would come very soon like the previous time, so I didn’t expect that even after passage of several days, Cui Chenlin didn’t come.

Seeing me in a restless state for several days in succession, Teacher Lin knew that I was worried about the matter of the Jade pendant.

“Don’t worry about anything, Teacher Lin won’t let you get hurt.” Teacher Lin gently caressed and stroked my head.

“I am afraid that he will kidnap Teacher Lin.” I said anxiously.

“He can’t. Teacher Lin is an adult. He won’t dare capture Teacher Lin.” Teacher Lin forced out a smile.

Seeing Teacher Lin’s smile, I felt much more relaxed.

What was bound to come would always come. [← Robin:Just a slight note here, in case this line confuses some of you, it’s the good old “If something bad is going to happen, then it’s gonna happen no matter what you do, so there’s no reason to worry, and if something good is going to happen, then you don’t need to worry either” thing, it’s in lots of other novels as well :)] One day, when I was preparing to return home along with Teacher Lin, and we had just walked to the school entrance, there was a person in front of us who was blocking our way.

That person was wearing black clothes, his skin was extraordinarily pale, deathly pale, and he looked somewhat scary.

He was Cui Chenlin.

He had finally come!

“Huang Jingyang, you go back first. Teacher Lin still has a bit of work to take care of.” Teacher Lin handed over the exercise books in her hands to my hand.



# My Daoist Life - Chapter 12

Protect

I grabbed Teacher Lin and pulled her behind me, Teacher Lin looked at me stunned. She didn't expect that at such a young young age, I actually had this much strength, making her unable to break free momentarily.

"Jing'er, I have come here for you." Cui Chenlin scowled, then started laughing grimly all of a sudden..

"You are not here to seek Teacher Lin, you have come here for that Jade pendant. You just want to exploit Teacher Lin, treating her like food cereals for the sake of nourishing that Jade pendant." I said in a loud voice.

"You actually know?!" This made Cui Chenlin look at me seriously. He naturally knew that someone in Ba Jiao village had helped Lin Jing, but it never occurred to him that that person would actually turn out to be me, a child.

"So, it is you." Cui Chenlin sneered, even after knowing that I had helped Teacher Lin, he still did not put me in his eyes. Perhaps in his eyes, I was nothing more than a child. Even if I had started cultivating straight from my mother's womb, it would still amount to only a few years of practice, and he had practiced for nearly two decades. The length of his practice was several times mine.

"It is me, so what about it?" I was very nervous in my heart, and even my breathing had become somewhat ragged. However, I still bravely faced Cui Chenlin. Perhaps that day when Teacher Lin spoke about marrying me, I had already mentally prepared myself to undertake the responsibility of protecting Teacher Lin. I no longer thought of myself as a child, but a real man. Only a man could marry Teacher Lin.

"You talk big! Unfortunately, you are still not qualified!" Cui Chenlin walked towards me sneering.

"You musn't hurt him!" Teacher Lin had an anxious urge to cry. Although she didn't understand the matters of Dao Cultivation, but she could feel that Cui Chenlin was formidable. She had been fooled earlier by his graceful words and flowery speech, but now she had genuinely recognized that this person was really dreadful.

"I have been telling you from the beginning to not come to these poor mountain barren fields, you didn't listen. If at that time you had listened to me, I wouldn't have needed to take care of this child. However, this child repeatedly disrupts my good deeds, how could I let him off?" Cui Chenlin leisurely pressured me.

I discovered that I couldn't help but retreat. I had only taken a single step back, before I

found myself leaning on Teacher Lin's body. I clenched my teeth and no longer retreated, because behind me was a person I had to protect. I absolutely had to stand in front.

This was a challenge that I had to necessarily face on the path of my Dao Cultivation. The Path of Dao was not a royal road, there would always be confrontations and one untold danger and challenge after another. The majority of people choose to give up amidst the untold dangers and challenges, or maybe stray away from the Dao, ending up not being able to touch the essence of the Dao throughout their entire lives. Only those possessing great courage are able to reach the other side.

At this very young age, I was naturally incapable of realizing this point, but I knew that I had only one option, to confront. I had already condensed a strand of primordial qi within my hands, and as soon as Chenlin got close enough, I would recklessly attack with this strand of primordial qi. This won't do, perhaps this strand of primordial qi will be insufficient, then I shall condense some more.

One strand, two strands, three strands..... I kept going until I had condensed ten strands of primordial qi, when I discovered that I had already reached my limit and could not control any more strands of primordial qi.

Owing to the ten strands of primordial qi, my aura suddenly underwent a great change.

Cui Chenlin stopped abruptly, he could already feel that the dreadful aura on my body was becoming more and more formidable. He was simply incapable of accepting the fact that he was unexpectedly able to feel extremely dreadful aura on my body. How comical and funny thing this was, that he, a nearly thirty year old person, was being intimidated by a first-grader.

Cui Chenlin was unwilling to walk even two steps forward, leaving only a distance of ten feet between me and him. As long as he walks two or three steps forward, he would become able to grabbing me in his hands. However, the ability to sense danger in Dao cultivators is much higher compared to ordinary people. Cui Chenlin was able to feel an enormous threat coming from me. I was also able to feel great terror coming from him. However, I did not cower, because I had something in my mind.

Cui Chenlin could see that my cultivation was not lower than his, he also didn't want to perish along with me, so he stepped back.

"Good, I will temporarily let you off first. Lin Jing, you are destined to be mine, you can't escape." Cui Chenlin sneered as he left. He chose to give up.

I didn't expect Cui Chenlin to give up, perhaps my actions just now had intimidated him. Perhaps he still has more means. However, after all is said and done, he retreated. I succeeded in protecting Teacher Lin for the first time.

"How could you be so stupid? Why must you stand in front, didn't you know that what you were doing was very dangerous?" Teacher Lin burst into tears as she said, while tightly embracing me.

Even though my back was sweating due to the fright I had received just now, smelling Teacher Lin's smell made me forget the danger I had just been in. A strong sense of accomplishment began growing in my heart.

Teacher Lin had an aura that I liked very much. I could feel it the moment I came into contact with her. The primordial qi within my body seemed to have become even more active as if cheering and frolicking for joy. Unfortunately, at that time I didn't understand what these aura were, and why they had such a great attraction to me, to the extent of even mobilizing the primordial qi within my body.

When I returned home along with Teacher Lin, Grandpa was returning from outside while walking barefoot.

"Grandpa, what were you doing?" I immediately stepped forward and asked.

Grandpa smiled at me and Teacher Lin: "I had gone to the fields to take out rice straws for drying in the sun. At home, we have to feed an ox, now we also have to feed a pig, at the winter time, the pen must be filled with straws. If these rice straws are not dried in the sun, then where would you go get these rice straws from in the Winter?"

Grandpa was almost sixty years of age this year. For a lot of old people in the village, the age of sixty is already their time of twilight. However, Grandpa recently has seemed to be still going very strong. His feet were originally an everyday complaint, but after I massaged his feet with primordial qi, his feet have had no problems at all. I have begun to understand that this primordial qi is really quite advantageous for people. If this primordial qi with white jade-like luster is beneficial for people, then that fiery red primordial qi in the fire would have what effect on people? Moreover, there is that green primordial qi, blue primordial qi, yellow primordial qi, purple primordial qi, etc. Perhaps they all have their own special roles, but I am still unaware of them at present.

"Huang Jingyang, what are you thinking?" Teacher Lin seeing me staring somewhat blankly while doing my homework, shook me promptly.

"No-nothing." I smiled.

"Hurry up and do your homework." After Teacher Lin came to live at my house, I had to finish my homework on time every day, and aside from that, I also had to complete additional assignments from Teacher Lin. Practicing writing with the ink-brush had already become a core element of my everyday life. I had already studied about two hundred letters from seal script, but it was still somewhat difficult when it came to writing the seal script.

When I was writing the seal script, unconsciously I allowed a trace of primordial qi to seep into the ink brush. At first I wasn't very good at writing the seal script letter 天 (Sky/Heaven), unexpectedly, it made me finish forming the letter at once. That 天 character on the newspaper unexpectedly flashed suddenly with a radiant brilliance, unexpectedly this 天 character had a trace of spiritual charm.

"This 天 character is written very well." Teacher Lin couldn't help but praise the writing after looking at it. However, that kind of a feeling couldn't be found even in the least bit later on no matter the efforts. Having continued writing several words, that kind of a feeling didn't emerge.

"It seems that you got lucky today. Nevermind, today, writing will be till here only. You should also take care of your tasks. Don't be too late." The words of Teacher Lin giving instructions, seemed like a sentence spoken by a doting mother, and also like an

affectionate wife.

Teacher Lin at the time of picking up the newspaper, was surprised that there were ink marks of a seal script 天 impressively left behind on the table. I had written that character just now, surprisingly going through three-four layers of paper, it got printed on the table.

“This is the legendary ‘Three Fen into the Wood’?” Teacher Lin muttered to herself.

[TLNote: <http://history.cultural-china.com/en/233History9471.html>

Apparently Wang Xizhi, also known as the Sage of calligraphy, wrote in a manner that the letters written by him had almost gone one centimeter (three fen) into the wood, which made him even more legendary]

I was walking out, so naturally I didn’t hear what Teacher Lin had said, but while facing Teacher Lin I waved my hand and said: “Teacher Lin I am going to pull out some hogweeds.”

The people in the village need not pull out hogweeds, they use fodder mixed with compatible cereals to feed pigs. This way the pigs grow faster. Only I am able to use hogweed to feed pigs. This way I can feed a little bit of cereal also, but pigs fed this way usually grow slowly. However, the growth of the pigs fed by me is not slow at all.

My house’s pig pen is open all day everyday, this makes it convenient for the pigs inside to come out. My house’s three pigs are different from the other villagers’ pigs. The pigs fed by other villagers are locked in a pig pen. The pig pen is not cleaned everyday, and a rather thick layer of rice straws are spread inside the pig pen. However, the pigs excrements all get piled up inside the pig pen. The hygiene of that pig pen is naturally extremely terrible, and the bodies of those pigs would be dirty. However, my house’s pig pen is open, and when they need to excrete, they would often run out and do it at a place designated for excreting. This way the insides of the pig pen remain clean. The rice straws spread out look neat and tidy, like beddings. If this was seen by people of the village, it would make them stare with their eyes open wide.

When I go to pull hogweeds, black bean would always remain by my side, keeping close to me. When he sees me pulling hogweeds, he very much thinks of helping me, but unfortunately, he could only keep barking and informing me where the hogweeds were.

“Foolish dog, stupid dog, at this place, hogweeds are everywhere, do I still need you to inform me?” I laughed while scolding.

Black Bean refused to acknowledge my reprimand, as he still continued to hop, skip and jump happily.

I was too young, and was unable to carry too much hogweed, naturally Old Yellow had become my good helper. A frame would be put on his body everyday, this frame could hold a bamboo basket on each side. I would wander around pulling hogweeds and putting them into Old Yellow’s baskets, and when the two baskets were completely filled, I would prepare to return home.

The evening time is the eating time for my poultry and livestock. As soon as they hear my call, all poultry and livestock would come rushing over. The three patterned pigs tried to outdo each other in terms of cleanliness and would call out ‘ao ao’ along the way. The chicks and the ducklings would spread their wings wishing they were able to fly. The ten

goslings would come waddling, they had developed a gentleman's demeanour at a young age. Old Yellow would also let out cries of 'moo moo' several times.

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 13

Natural Calligrapher

Ever since Cui Chenlin appeared, I've had a feeling of intense crisis, no matter whether I am at school, or at home. I have been practicing boxing in any free time that I get. The elementary style of Xing Yi Quan Five Fists had already been practiced by me to the point of knowing it inside out. However, I could only get the form, not the essence. The essence of Xing Yi Quan Five Fists may be extremely important to other people, but it was not so important to me.

Moving as they pleased, all kinds of primordial qi located within my body were shuttling back and forth. Apparently, they had taken my body to be an amusement park. I did not take great pains to restrain the primordial qi, but with the passage of time, they were apparently leaving behind their aura within my body. Some luminous primordial qi had begun considering my body as their hiding place.

Looking at me working so hard while shadowboxing, Teacher Lin was clearly aware of my thoughts.

"Huang Jingyang, Teacher Lin doesn't need your protection, you are a child. If Cui Chenlin comes, I won't let him hurt you. We live in a society controlled by laws, he cannot injure somebody as he pleases." Teacher Lin was worried that my little body wouldn't be able to bear such heavy pressure, also she couldn't bear to see me undergo so much suffering on her account.

"Teacher Lin, I won't let you get hurt. In case if he comes, I will use my fist to drive him back." I said resolutely.

Chopping Fist, Smashing Fist, Drilling Fist, Exploding Fist, and Crossing Fist, were the five forms of the fist technique, although I could only retain the form while doing them, my body had become a good conductor of primordial qi. Whenever I use these fist techniques to the fullest, different types of primordial qi spontaneously begin shuttling back and forth within my body. From a chaotic mess with no order to a slow but steady collected stream. These different types of mischievous primordial qi then take on a small snake-like appearance, and flow like a stream all around in my body. I didn't know how to guide them, so I just let them move around for now. However, whenever I put the fist techniques to use, these tiny snakes begin to follow a specific path. It was as if all of the water within the farmlands had flowed into the pond erratically and then from the pond into the pool before slowly flowing into the river.

[TLNote: For seeing the five fist technique in action <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=iQZ3xn-UmJI%5D>

"Huang Jingyang, how about you teach Teacher Lin to fight? This way, Teacher Lin would

also be able to help you later.” Teacher Lin said.

I nodded after a bit of thought: “Ok. However, practicing fighting is very exhausting.”

“Teacher Lin is not afraid of hardship.” Teacher Lin said smiling.

However, I could only teach Teacher Lin the movements, Teacher Lin couldn’t actually feel the existence of primordial qi, so she could only learn the hollow forms. However, Teacher Lin was still learning earnestly and paying scrupulous attention to every detail. This made me, as a little teacher, feel a sense of accomplishment.

Time flew by very quickly, when waking up in the morning, the mountains, rivers, fields would all be appear as mere traces within the fog. A white gas would always be floating atop the water in the well. While speaking, white mist would always come out from the mouth. Thus, one would know that Autumn had already quietly passed, and Winter had arrived uninvited. Walking on the paths in the field, the soles of the feet would always become sticky with mud. The soil below would make crisp sounds of crunching, naturally it was the sounds of those dog teeth-like ice-crystals getting crushed.

Coming out at this time, one could feel a whiff of the frigid coldness, the plants were covered in white ice crystals. Holding the plants in one’s hand, one could feel the bone-chilling coldness. However, these things didn’t matter much for me as far as I was concerned. I would pick the tender green water grass together with my little hands, while using the sickle to cut them from the roots, and then put them into the little basket on my back.

In this ice-cold weather, I didn’t feel any cold in my hands. I had already rigorously rubbed my hands together beforehand, and now they had already become boiling hot, and it was easy to resist the bitter coldness of the water grass.

Originally, Grandpa wouldn’t have allowed me to come out on such a cold day and cut the water grass. However, I was thinking of the fish which, after growing up, could be sold during new year’s time for a lot more money. During the new year’s celebration time, the bigger the fish, the better price it would be able to reach because making dried fish meat, required bigger fish.

Early morning every day, watching the shoal of fish in the fish pond fiercely snatching at the water grass thrown by me, had become a daily pleasure. There was a time when Grandpa felt quite puzzled, as to why the crucian carps all came out to fight over the water grass I threw. Originally, in other people’s fish ponds, only the grass carps would eat the water grass, and other fish needed to be fed other feed.

Teacher Lin rubbed her hands, put them on her mouth, before exhaling a mouthful of steam. She was still feeling very cold in her hands.

“Huang Jingyang, it’s such a cold day, how can you go and cut fish grass?” Teacher Lin took my hand but was amazed to find that my hand was still as warm as before.

“Teacher Lin, I am not afraid of the cold, see how I am still emitting steam.” I laughed.

“Are you sweating? Hurry up and go change your clothes.” Teacher Lin was worried that my back might get cold.

I shook my head: "It's nothing. It will evaporate soon."

"Won't do, you have to change your clothes, Teacher Lin will help wipe your back." Teacher Lin was very firm, leaving no room for dissent.

"Alright, but only after I finish feeding these fish with the grass." I kept incessantly throwing the fish grass from the bamboo basket, immediately, a large number of fish rushed out inside the water, making every effort possible in the struggle to get at the fish grass floating on the surface of the water.

"They are surprisingly happy to eat this. Oh that's right, Huang Jingyang, is it not said that only grass carps can eat grass? How could these crucian carps also be able to eat this grass?" Even though Teacher Lin didn't know anything about farming, such common sense type topics she understood very well.

Why would I know? I I shook my head: "I throw, and they eat it, right?"

"Strange." Teacher Lin scratched her head, she also couldn't understand why the animals being raised by me were so strange? The ox would graze on the field ridges on its own, patterned pigs would go to a fixed place for urination and defecation. The chicks, ducklings, and goslings would all chatter non-stop everyday, but when they went into action they would move with an army-like discipline. In addition to that there was a dog which was a bit too clever. It seemed like whatever thing I put my hand on would become especially strange.

Teacher Lin already knew about my money making schemes, but she was worried that there would be a day, when I would be even more aggrieved. For example, If through great efforts I manage to make some money, my Mama and Papa still don't bother with me, she wouldn't be able to bear to see me so inconsolably heart-broken.

"Huang Jingyang, if in the future, these fish, or these chickens, ducks and geese, are all sold for money, but your Mama still doesn't come back, then what?" Teacher Lin for my own good was trying to prepare me mentally in advance. She already knew about the situation of our family. Mama and Papa didn't bring back my younger brother, because they were worried that my younger brother would get infected with my bad luck. Perhaps they had already given up on me, because I had bad luck in my body. People in the rural area were very afraid of ghosts, and I had been labelled an evil spirit by the People.

"Then that would mean that the money wasn't enough, as soon as I have enough money, they will certainly come back. At present, it is insufficient, but next year I will make a profit. I will buy a cow, have it give birth to a calf, in the future turning into a herd of cattle. Grandpa said that a cow could be sold for a several thousand yuan. Then I will have a lot of money. Next year, I will also raise a lot more pigs. Chickens, Ducks and Geese will also be increased a bit. I can also obtain the chicken eggs. And when that moment comes, I will be super wealthy." My thirst for money doesn't originate from greed, but from my eagerness for familial love.

Teacher Lin looked away, while using her hand to stroke her hair.

"Teacher Lin, will you truly wait until I grow up and marry me in the future?" My emotional train of thought took a big leap. This was actually more in consonance with my age.



Teacher Lin turned around her head, and I saw that there were traces of tears flowing on her face. After crying, there would be teardrops left behind in the eyelashes, even if wiped cleanly, the eyelashes would end up sticking together.

“Of course I will. However, when that time comes and Teacher Lin gets old, will you turn your back on Teacher Lin?” Teacher Lin said with a smile.

Teacher Lin’s smile was very beautiful, even better than that of those celebrities in those tv shows and movies.

“Teacher Lin will never grow old.” I said earnestly.

“Only monsters never get old. Teacher Lin is not a monster.” Teacher Lin grinned happily.

“I won’t allow you to grow old.” I was not feeling very comfortable with this topic of Teacher Lin growing old.

After Teacher Lin came to live at our house, the looks within the eyes of my classmates towards me became even more complicated. Originally they used to look down at me very much, but now they have turned envious. Even though Teacher Lin treated all the children in the school equally, she had inadvertently, started to treat me as her child.

My grades were the best in class. There was nothing to be done about that, as with Teacher Lin’s free private tutoring, I was always several steps ahead of other children in the class. My writing was also the best amongst the students in the class. Teacher Lin even made me participate in school calligraphy competition, and my calligraphy was posted on the school bulletin board. Seeing characters written by me being posted on the school bulletin board, made me feel excited down to the bottom of my heart. A brat who was cultivating Dao was still just a brat. Furthermore, even I myself didn’t know that I was cultivating Dao.

What felt very unexpected to me and Teacher Lin, was that even after two months, Cui Chenlin didn’t show up. We had very quickly begun to forget about this person. Teacher Lin also hadn’t returned home, and every once in a while, would go to the village branch clerk house to make a call home. Has the danger passed already? or has Cui Chenlin given up on Teacher Lin?

Although I had been writing seal script for a long time, I still found it very difficult to write the letter like that 天 (Sky/Heaven) character which I had written on that day.

“How did you manage to write this character. When I saw this character written by you, it seemed to me like, three fen into the wood. It’s a saying where the ink of the characters written is able to penetrate down into the table. It surprised me when I saw it.” Teacher Lin was busy looking down under the table.

“Ah! It’s actually true!” Teacher Lin found the 天 character written by me under the table. The ink had unexpectedly penetrated through the table. I also went to look and the 天 character was surprisingly clear. The 天 character was symmetrical, and even when looking from the other side, it could be seen clearly and distinctly.

This character, was really a work of art. From this one character, one was able to make out the sky’s vastness, the sky’s wideness and the sky’s grandeur. A single character could accommodate every natural manifestation of the world. This was really somewhat inconceivable.

Teacher Lin blankly squatted down on the ground, clearly she was still wondering how was I able to write a character which was so inconceivable.

“Huang Jingyang, you are a natural calligrapher. From now on, the time that you spend practicing calligraphy every day will have to be extended.” Teacher Lin had made up her mind.

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 14

## The Spirituality of Characters

“You should think nice and well about how you were able to write that character at that time. If you are able to remember how you wrote that character, then it would become possible for you to write similar characters in the future.” Teacher Lin unceasingly lectured me, so that I would go think about the process of writing this “天” (Sky/Heaven) character.

In fact, on that day when I wrote the 天 character, I had felt a sort of enlightenment broadening my horizons, that sort of a feeling was extremely nice. However, I couldn't remember what had actually happened during the process of writing that character.

“Huh?” It was as if something flashed in my mind, but again I wasn't able to catch hold of it.

“Huang Jingyang, you recalled something?” Teacher Lin asked happily.

“I seemed to have recalled something, lacking only a little bit, but I wasn't able to catch hold of it.” I said regretfully.

“Don't worry, no rush. Think slowly, I won't rush you.” Teacher Lin comforted me, and took out the paper on which I had written that character on that day. Teacher Lin seemed to have preserved this sheet of newspaper. It's strange to say, but this character seemed as if its ink had dried only recently. Upon opening it, one could see that magnificent brilliance of the character written with ink which had seemingly just dried. Actually that character itself is not written so good, I am just learning calligraphy, it is impossible to write perfect strokes like a calligrapher. However, the charm within that characters makes one forget the calligraphy itself.

Seeing that character, I suddenly had an impression, because within this character, I could see qi moving. The moving qi was gem-like white, and was still as before lingering on the character. So it turns out that the reason the character written by me has such charm, is because of primordial qi. While I was writing the character, the primordial qi got into the ink-brush, and as a result, the character written had charm.

I hurriedly took a piece of paper. This piece of paper had been bought from the streets by Teacher Lin, the paper twice as thick as a newspaper, and also was very smooth, apparently it was quite solid. Teacher Lin said that this was called rice paper. Last time, Teacher Lin wanted to make me write the 天 character like that again. However, I couldn't write it a second time.

This time, I quickly wrote 天 character on top of it. While writing the character, I poured primordial qi through the ink-brush, which then flowed onto the paper. The seal script

“天”

character, was finished in one breath. Using only but a second, however after I finished writing this character, I felt very exhausted, as if I had exhausted all my energy.

“What happened?” Teacher Lin seeing something wrong with me, immediately asked in a concerned manner.

“I am very tired.” I put down the ink-brush, and then sat down onto the stool, feeling even more exhausted than after a trip to the mountains to cut firewood.

“Let’s go, Teacher will bring you to rest.” Teacher Lin picked me up in her arms, and at this time I couldn’t even open my eyes, straightaway falling asleep in Teacher Lin’s bosom.

By the time I woke up, the sky was already very bright, I hurriedly got up.

“Damnit, today I woke up so late. I still haven’t gone to cut fish grass.” I dressed in a hurry and rushed outside.

“Huang Jingyang, don’t go today, Grandpa cut the fish grass for you and also let the Ox out. I have already made preparations for the meal. Today I cook, while you light the cooking fire for me.” Teacher Lin called out to me.

I was forced into the kitchen.

“Have you already figured out how to write those kind of characters?” Teacher Lin asked.

I nodded.

“After writing characters in that manner, do you get very tired?” Teacher Lin asked a follow-up question.

“Yes. After finishing that character, I felt very sleepy, but unlike yesterday I didn’t feel that tired the first time.” I felt quite baffled.

“Is it possible that you overexerted yesterday?” Teacher Lin asked.

I thought for a while, but I hadn’t used any force, rather, I had simply mobilized the primordial qi. However, the first time, the primordial qi was mobilized very naturally, letting it take its own course, as a result of which the consumption was not that great. But this time, I forcefully mobilized the primordial qi, managing to condense the spiritual energy atop the brush with much difficulty, because there are differences between the ink-brush and my body. I wasn’t able to feel the existence of the ink-brush, let alone talk about condensing primordial qi onto it. However, when at last I managed to succeed in it unexpectedly, the consumption was also very great.

“Found the root cause?” Teacher Lin asked.

I nodded, “It seems like I found it already.”

Teacher Lin put away the pot to one side, and then pulled me into my room.

“Come, take a look at this ‘天’ character that you wrote yesterday, it seems to have great spiritual energy, but the character itself doesn’t seem to be aesthetically pleasing. It doesn’t seem to have the same vividness that the first one had. I don’t know how you did

it, but although the ‘天’ character you wrote last night is impressive, it isn’t as good as the first one you wrote.” Teacher Lin had already placed side by side the two 天 characters written by me.

What made me greatly surprised was, that atop the ‘天’ written yesterday, there was even less primordial qi lingering atop it compared to the first character I wrote. Deliberately guided primordial qi unexpectedly can’t compare with the involuntarily formed character.

“Don’t worry, take it slow. It is very important to gain a clear understanding.” Teacher Lin said.

At this time, I had already figured it out. I spread out the newspaper on the table, then lifting the ink-brush, I slowly began writing the “天” character on the paper. While writing 天, I thought of the azure skies, thought of the beautiful stars, thought of the boundless immensity of the cosmos, thought of wild geese flying in the vast sky....

Unbeknownst to me, the brush in my hand had already moved into action and effortlessly drew the character “天” onto the paper. This time, not only did I not feel exhausted after having finished writing, instead I felt very relaxed. I went on to write one after another, densely packed onto the newspaper. Only until there was no space left on the newspaper, did I stop.

“How are you feeling?” Teacher Lin was fearing a repeat of yesterday’s events.

“I’m feeling very good.” I said.

Teacher Lin also smiled: “You succeeded, you have written very well.”

Teacher Lin looked under the table, but was actually surprised to find that this time the ink didn’t penetrate through the table. There was not even a trace of ink on the table.

However, these characters seem to have even greater charm than the character from the first time? Teacher Lin wrinkled her brows, unable to figure out what was going on in the end. Why this time it didn’t go three fen into the wood?

[TLNote: Actually this time the Author used 尺 (Che), which is equal to one-third of a meter instead of 分 (fen) which is one-third of an inch. I am presuming it to be a typo since the accepted saying/idiom uses fen, and one-third of a meter seems preposterous]

“Oh right, it’s control. This is a result of Huang Jingyang’s control!” Teacher Lin stood up excitedly.

“That’s right, Huang Jingyang, you succeeded. You have effectively grasped the way of writing characters in this manner. Moreover, you are able to control your strength to a very high degree. Therefore, each character is written extremely smooth and round.

At this time, the newspaper unexpectedly floated up from the table, and radiated light in all directions, before slowly falling down onto the table.

Teacher Lin was gobsmacked, “Huang Jingyang, why did that happen? Do you know?”

How would I know? I only knew that it might have something to do with the contents of what I had written. This form of seal script and the seal script on the bronze medal were completely identical. I still didn’t know what effects the seal script on the bronze medal were, however, I knew that I had already touched the tip of this secret’s iceberg.

“You need to remember this feeling, later when you write characters, be sure to evoke this feeling.” Teacher Lin very happily spread out the newspaper which I had written on and used clips to press it down.

“Huang Jingyang, you learnt seal script just to look at those seal script character on that bronze medal, right?” Teacher Lin, seeing me holding the bronze medal in my hands, felt her heart skip.

I did not deny, and nodded: “I couldn’t recognize these characters.”

After some time, I began writing again, but all of a sudden I could no longer find that feeling. The style of writing 天 character had absolutely no use while writing characters. This spell of calligraphy practice, had me somewhat preoccupied, leaving other matters to be left aside quite a bit. There was a time when I was just lost in thought during class, while pondering how to bring out the charm while writing characters.

I knew that when I was writing that 天 character, I was able to sense the characteristics of the sky, but what kind of characteristics did 地 have? I had no idea. I hadn’t read the characters written on the bronze medal, but each character had its own spirituality, and in order to bring that spirituality out while writing, one must find a special method. While I was writing that 天 character, the white sparkling primordial qi was flowing within my body incessantly. Ultimately, it attached itself onto the calligraphy.

During class, I was looking at the blackboard without blinking, even my eyeballs didn’t move. Teacher Lin didn’t notice it in the beginning, however, when the class was over, I kept maintaining the same posture as before. My eyes were still looking at the blackboard, without blinking at all. The students in the class would rarely pay attention to me, but Teacher Lin would always pay attention to me. So, when she saw me staring continuously at the blackboard still as before, she had already become aware that something wasn’t right.

“Huang Jingyang! Huang Jingyang! .....

I heard a voice coming from a distant place of someone calling out to me, apparently it was someone very close to me, seemed like my mother, or yet seemed like Teacher Lin.

“Teacher Lin, I again saw you in a dream.” I laughed, as I was under the belief that I was still dreaming.

“Huang Jingyang, Huang Jingyang.....”

The sounds of yelling near my ear increased more and more.

“Huang Jingyang!” This time I could hear it very clearly, it was Mr. Han.

“Don’t disturb me, ok?!” I hated the fact that Mr. Han had interrupted my beautiful dream, so I straightaway yelled at him.

Mr. Han was thrown back flying, only to land on the ground on his buttocks.

“The second time! This is already the second time!” Mr. Han was wailing on the floor as if he were at a funeral, while he tried to stand up, before turning around and leaving the classroom. I was startled to find that a bunch of people had already surrounded me.

“He’s gone crazy again, he’s gone crazy again.” The big fatty Huang Shulang with an

open mouth and face stiff as a board, kept shaking right in front of my eyes.

“Huang Jingyang, you come aside. All of you children, go play outside.” Teacher Lin ushered all the other children outside.

“Huang Jingyang, what happened to you?” Teacher Lin was on verge of crying.

My eyeballs moved, and after glancing around in all directions: “Am I not in a dream? Just a moment ago, I heard Headmaster Han shouting at me.”

Teacher Lin couldn't help but giggle, and throw a punch at me.

“This child, you really frightened Teacher.”

Teacher Lin also hugged me tightly, I knew that Teacher Lin's feelings towards me was closer than that of a parent and child.

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 15

## The Charm of Fountain Pen's Characters

By now, every time Headmaster Han walked near our classroom during his round, he would think of getting me expelled. However, those two events had left him completely terrified. He really did not dare provoke me, also I didn't bring about any other damage to the school. Can blankness be considered an issue for sending off someone? Headmaster Han naturally could not use this as a pretext for getting me expelled, moreover, as far I was concerned, I was somewhat of a terrifying existence for him. Just in case, by any chance, if I were to get angry, then what would happen to him. He also didn't have any place to vent his grievances. I am just a kid of the first grade, so there definitely cannot be any civil action.

Headmaster Han was smoking a cigarette, while kneading his buttocks and holding the Romance of the Three Kingdoms, in his hands, he looked up. "...Kong Ming donned the simple Daoist dress and, attended by a couple of lads who were directed to bring the zither, he sat down on the watchtower on the castle wall, and leaned on the parapet, while incense burned as he played the zither."

[TLNote: Extract from/Reference to the famous novel "Romance of the Three Kingdoms" where Kong Ming a.k.a. Zhuge Liang, comes up with the empty fort strategy to fool Sima Yi of the Wei.[https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Empty\\_Fort\\_Strategy#Zhuge\\_Liang](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Empty_Fort_Strategy#Zhuge_Liang) ]

Teacher Lin didn't have even the least bit of misgiving in criticizing me: "Look at you child....."

Teacher Lin was prepared to scold me ruthlessly but she paused, barely had she opened her mouth, when she discovered that she didn't know what to criticize. This kind of a thing wasn't done by me deliberately, but she wasn't resigned to leave me without scolding on account of the great fright she had just received.

"What were you thinking just now?" Teacher Lin asked after remaining quiet for a good while.

"I was thinking of how to write characters." I replied very honestly.

Teacher Lin thought, that unexpectedly it was her own mistake. If she hadn't made me put in great effort to practice calligraphy everyday, then such symptoms of obsession also wouldn't appear in me.

"In the future, during class time, you cannot think of other things. Must attend class earnestly, understand?" Teacher Lin could only drop the matter at this point.



“Teacher Lin, I have already figured out how to write characters.” I said excitedly.

Huang Shulang looked at me full of disdain and said: “Someone doesn’t even know how to write characters. I had already learnt how to write characters in pre-school.”

I seriously had no interest in the snotty nosed big fatty, as if we were in two different realms. Being ignored by me made Huang Shulang very angry, as he tore out an empty page from the exercise notebook, and wrote down on it in a terribly wobbly handwriting, the character ‘地’.

[TLNote: 地 Stands for Earth]

“See clearly, the character 地 is written like this.” Huang Shulang threw that piece of paper onto my table.

“Teacher, Huang Shulang is again tearing the exercise notebook.” Classmate Li Lijuan who was seated on the same table as Huang Shulang, immediately reported this conduct of Huang Shulang tearing the exercise notebook, to Teacher Lin.

I broke out into a laugh. Huang Shulang was dumbstruck. The key point was that the exercise notebook from which the page was torn was not his own, rather it belonged to classmate Li Lijuan.

As a result of her notebook’s page being torn, classmate Li Lijuan bent down on the table and started crying.

“I, uh, I didn’t do it on purpose.” Huang Shulang began stammering.

“Huang Shulang, your behaviour today has been very bad. I had already warned you the first time, that you cannot tear pages from the exercise notebook. Did you look how many pages are remaining in your exercise notebook? Now you have gotten even worse, even daring to tear from the exercise notebook of a female classmate. In this class, you shall stand at the back of the classroom.

Huang Shulang resentfully stood up and walked towards the back of the classroom.

I picked up the fountain pen which had been gifted to me by Teacher Lin and began writing the seal script character ‘地’ on a rough page. Although I did it on a whim, I didn’t expect to get some unexpected results. This ‘地’ character, that I had not ever practiced writing before, exuding charm after being written. It can be like this also! One can accomplish it using fountain pen also.

Under the excitement, I continued writing and filled up the whole page with ‘地’ character. The sky was black and earth yellow.....I was slowly beginning to comprehend the charm of the character 地. While the character ‘地’ was being written, the charm of 地 was being exuded.

[TLNote: The sky was black and earth yellow (天地玄黄) is the first half of the first line of the “Thousand Character Classic”. It is actually a poem used as a primer for teaching characters to Chinese children. The full first line would be 天地玄黄，宇宙洪荒 – The sky was black and earth yellow; space and time vast, limitless. Translation courtesy: Nathan Sturman <http://www.oocities.org/npsturman/tce.html%5D>

Ma Jindong caught a glimpse of the ‘地’ character filling up the entirety of my rough page, but he didn’t know that it was seal script, which led him to believe that I was

drawing pictures. He immediately raised his hand to report to Teacher Lin.

“Teacher, Huang Jingyang is drawing pictures on the table during class.” Ma Jindong thought of grabbing that rough paper I was writing ‘地’ character on so he could show it to Teacher, so he came as if to catch the thief along with the stolen goods. However, a bizarre thing happened, that thin piece of rough paper, suddenly began glowing with a divine light, and the paper suddenly sank down into the table. Ma Jindong tried to pull, but he couldn’t pull it even one bit.

“Huang Jingyang, you still, still, still dare to hold on to it!” Ma Jindong thought that I was tightly holding onto that rough paper, and out of excitement he immediately started stuttering.

Teacher Lin came over and she saw the characters I had written on the rough paper, suddenly felt a peculiarity. The charm of this character was not something calligraphy was capable of equalling. Looking at the character, she was able to feel the majesty, the vastness as well as the profundity of the Mother Earth.

“What are you writing?” Teacher Lin asked.

“I was just trying to find the difference compared to using ink-brush to write characters, and to understand it better, just wrote something randomly.” I scratched my head, while saying embarrassedly.

I again attempted to use the fountain pen to write the seal script ‘天’ character, and as expected it could also be written in the same way.

I didn’t what purpose was served by writing characters in this manner, but Teacher Lin collected characters as if they were precious treasures.

My progress in XingYi Quan Five Fists Technique was much faster compared to that in calligraphy. I was already capable of skillfully performing all the moves recorded in the book 《Xing Yi Quan Five Fists Illustrated》, with each move and each form, capable of making the wind around the fists make echoes of hu hu. Just listening to the force of his movements would let one know that he wasn’t someone to be trifled with

Within my body, the strands of primordial qi had converged and formed snakes, and gathered together in the lower abdominal region beneath my navel. These different coloured primordial qi like little serpents in my lower abdominal region beneath the navel, chased each other with great vigour. It seemed just like those Yin-Yang fish on the bronze medal. The never-ending chase slowly took the form of a vortex. After that the different coloured primordial qi little serpents began grouping up here. I could feel that in the lower abdominal region beneath my navel, the primordial qi had formed a lump of dense mist.

After this lump of mist had formed, the primordial qi specks of light outside seemed to be finding my body more and more attractive. They immediately arrived to me side before drilling into my body, and before merging into the lump of mist. The lump of mist was slowly getting denser.

However, once I started using Xing Yi Quan Five Fists technique, a vortex would be formed around my body. The primordial qi specks of light from all directions would be crazily absorbed and gathered inside my body. Still there were some primordial qi light

specks that would escape from my body, however, the quantity was not as much as it was previously.

Since the beginning, I never knew what use these primordial qi had, but I knew that these primordial qi can bring a feeling of great comfort to me. I suspected that these primordial qi were similar to the internal force depicted on television in Wuxia, making it possible for me to become a martial arts master. Perhaps by collecting more of these primordial qi, could just make my internal force even more profound.

However, I discovered the Xing Yi Quan Five Fists technique and I didn't become a martial arts master overnight, but my body was becoming increasingly robust. Everything also seemed to be growing faster compared to my others of the same age as me. I felt somewhat like a crane in a flock of chicken. Compared to other students in my class, I was nearly a head taller.

Even my family's chicken, ducks and geese, piglets or even the puppy black bean were all growing at a much faster pace compared to other family's poultry and livestock. Black bean was only a few months old, but it had already established his dominant reign unparalleled within the village, becoming the king of dogs. After that, Black bean within a dozen or so days, caused great commotion within every house and every family. Going round door-to-door and calling on the other family's dogs and educating them on how to act as dogs. Also fortunately, nobody from those in the Ba Jiao village who had been visited, dared to come and interrogate me. So much that nobody dared to act against the dog which had been raised by me. Fortunately, Black bean hadn't really come of age, and also it wasn't the suitable time, otherwise this fellow really had the potential to act as a despot and force himself on the females.

After having disciplined all the dogs in the Ba Jiao Village once, it was already beginning to feel like a hindrance for Black bean. It was the beginning of the conquest of the villages neighbouring the Ba Jiao which were set as the new targets.

When Teacher Lin and I returned home, Black Bean was returning triumphant with a big plump pheasant in his mouth. He placed the pheasant in front of me as if asking for commendations. After that he lifted his head and sat down besides the pheasant.

"How could this fellow kill somebody else's house's chicken?" Teacher Lin thought that Black bean had run himself into trouble.

I said laughing: "This is not a domestic chicken, this is a pheasant. This fellow is trying to take credit for it."

"Pheasant's scientific name is Ring necked Pheasant, and this species belongs in the list of National Grade B protected animals. Catching these pheasants is illegal." Teacher Lin said.

"But this was caught by Black bean, could it be that he will be dragged off to prison?" I couldn't understand it somewhat.

Teacher Lin also scratched her head: "Anyways, Pheasants are protected animals." Girls have times when they don't care about logic while preaching.

"Then this Pheasant, should we eat it or throw it away?" I asked a more important

question.

Teacher Lin thought for a bit, but nevertheless decided to abandon the principle: “Better to eat it. It would be a pity to throw it.”

“That’s ok, I will go boil water.” I patted a strand of primordial qi into Black bean’s body, which could be considered a reward for it. Of course, that much wouldn’t be enough, “Black bean performed quite well, I will give you chicken bones to eat at night.”

Originally I was thinking of saying of giving Black bean the chicken leg to eat, but thought that this pheasant’s two chicken legs are insufficient for even myself to eat, I promptly changed my decision. In any case, Black bean didn’t understand what I was saying, it was delighted nonetheless.

However at dinner time, Black Bean found it very difficult to safeguard its interests. Even though the three patterned pigs had come later than Black bean, but by now they had already grown to weigh ten jin, already exceeding the bodyweight of black bean. Even though they couldn’t compare in fighting strength to Black bean but they had a reckless desire to eat. Every time a bone would appear on the floor, the three piglets would all recklessly swoop down on it. Even though Black bean was quite nimble and agile, but even so he was no match for these three fellows who were gluttonous to the core.

At the beginning, Black bean was in no mood to forgive as he angrily barked at the three reckless ones. Who could have imagined that those three reckless ones would charge forward all of a sudden, dashing against Black bean from one side, who immediately rolled 360 degrees in mid air and then rolled 720 degrees on the ground before coming to a stop.

Black bean didn’t really dare bite these three fellows. These three fellows were my piggy bank. Upon hearing the shrieks of those three fellows, I immediately threw a fist and kick at the same time at Black bean.

Black Bean on the side while staring at those three fellows, was probably secretly thinking in his heart: Eat, Eat, Eat and get Fat, will Kill you and eat your meat.

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 16

Winter vacations arrive

Waking up in the morning, I discovered that the house was especially dark, but the outside was especially bright. Opening the door to look, the outside had already become a world of white. The snowflakes were dancing in the air filling up the sky. There was no time for me to change shoes, as I directly stepped on to the Shai valley plains wearing cotton shoes. I wanted to leave behind my footprints in the first snow of this new year. This was exactly the kind of a thing that children of my age liked to do. Unfortunately, my cotton shoes didn't leave behind any pattern in the snow.

“YangYang, hurry up and come back! Your shoes will go wet and you will die of cold.” Grandpa shouted immediately when he saw me.

Teacher Lin was also very happy, as she dashed into the snow and grabbing onto a lump of snow, she threw it towards me.

“Huh?” I didn't think that Teacher Lin would behave like this. I had always regarded Teacher Lin as an adult and an elder. Of course there were also the special feelings that an adolescent has towards a beautiful girl. However, I didn't think that Teacher Lin was actually very young. She is also only 18-19 years old, and she also similarly loves beautiful things.

Black bean also at the sight of something new, came running over to me cheerfully, and began bouncing vivaciously in front of me.

The three patterned pigs also dashed into the snow, believing it to be rice, they thought of eating it heartily. As they dashed into the snow they began gulping it down by big mouthfuls. The three piglets especially liked eating, disliked not eating. They also weren't picky about the food. If evaluated by the standards of a child, then this would make for definitely the most well behaved child.

Having eaten snow for almost half a day, but they still weren't satisfied. The three piglets resentfully returned to the pig pen to go sleep. Leaving behind the most shameful and ugly patterns in the Shai valley plains. These three fellows were also disappointed with the result.

“Huang Jingyang, let's make a snowman!” Teacher Lin suggested.

Grandpa quickly called me back to change into a pair of rubber boots.

Having changed into the rubber boots, I was able to run laps around the Shai valley plains, so just then started piling up the snowman along with Teacher Lin.

The first lump of snow after being rolled into a big snowball, constituted the snowman's torso. Another ball of snow was rolled into a bit smaller snowball, and together with Teacher Lin placed the smaller snowball on top of the bigger snowball, thereby making it the head of the snowman. After that came the time for decorating the snowman. Before long, a giant snowman was already standing in the Shai valley plains.

With the sudden snow, this meant that the year had almost passed, and the winter vacations were approaching soon. I was looking forward to the winter vacations period, but actually did not notice that Teacher Lin would want to return home.

This was problem which was a big dilemma for me. The free time of winter vacation is for every child, no matter whether his scores are good, his performance is bad. All this time, I had been looking forward to the vacations. However, I was forced to face a problem. As the semester had ended, Teacher Lin was preparing to go home.

"Huang Jingyang, after Teacher Lin goes back, you must maintain your habit of studying every day. Every day you must persist in practicing writing characters with the ink brush. You must also read daily. You are very intelligent, you must get out of Ba Jiao Village. You cannot stay here for a life time, you know? Outside is a much bigger world." I agreed to each of Teacher Lin's requests.

"Teacher Lin, will you be coming back to Ba Jiao village, next year?" I seemingly had a premonition of something.

Teacher Lin didn't speak for a very long time.

"Teacher Lin, don't go." Also though I knew from a very long time that Teacher Lin did not belong to BaJiao village, and she can't stay in BaJiao village, however, really facing this kind of a fact, for me as a seven year old child, was really somewhat cruel.

"I don't know. My family members want me to return. I don't know if I would be able to come next year or not." Teacher Lin couldn't bear to tell me the truth, but also didn't want to deceive me, because sooner or later I would come to know of the truth.

"Do you want to marry your boyfriend? He is not a good person." My face was already full of tears, but I was still worried that after Teacher Lin goes back then she will get hurt.

"Don't worry, Teacher Lin will not marry him. Teacher Lin will wait for you to grow up and come marry Teacher Lin." Teacher Lin said as she smiled unwillingly, while gently wiping the tears flowing down her face.

I don't know how the world of adults is like, but I am not able of stopping each and everything from happening.

I had already learned several hundred seal script characters, but able to bring out the charm only in 天 and 地 characters. After writing 地, I have been trying to comprehend the way of writing 雷 character. However, I have been unable to grasp even the basic outline. 震 represents 雷, however I always fall short of controlling the imposing manner of thunder and lightning. Therefore, it is only natural that I cannot bring out the charm in writing it. 天 and 地 after being written are capable of bringing tranquility and feeling of relaxation, however I know that if the 雷 character is written, then afraid that it would provoke the divine thunder from nine heavens. Even if I am able comprehend this kind of

an imposing manner, I am afraid that I would have no means to write it down. Writing it down would mean injuring somebody, or perhaps even bringing harm to myself.  
[TLNote: So basically after 天 = Sky, and 地 = Earth, He is now looking at 雷 = Thunder. Also, 震 is the Bagua representation of the thunder.]

Teacher Lin didn't dare make me spend too much energy comprehending the charm of the characters, because she was afraid that I would suffer a mishap.

"Everything will come naturally, will be able to write characters well, don't excessively pursue the charm of the characters. You are the only one your Grandpa can rely on, if you have an accident, then later who would take care of Grandpa in the future?"

I turned a deaf ear to Teacher Lin's repeated urging, I had only one thought: Teacher Lin is going to go. After that it is unlikely for someone to treat me the same way as Teacher Lin did.

My heart had become empty and desolate, even so much that I forgot that I had to cut hogweeds. Early morning, I forgot to remember that the fish grass needed to be cut. Luckily, my house's chicken, ducks, geese, pigs and ox can all go out to forage for food by themselves. They always knew that the plains had been covered with thick layer of snow, but upturning this snow, food can be gathered from under it. The fishes in the pond were hidden underwater during the winter, lying motionless. There wouldn't be much problem even if they aren't fed for a while. Grandpa scattered some boiled sweet potatoes, and also fed somethings to the ducks, geese, chicken and pigs.

Grandpa sometimes would also lovingly stroke my head with his hands. Ever since those two years of half-consciousness, I had for a long time didn't care for someone to this extent. However, Teacher Lin was like a phoenix, Ba Jiao Village cannot keep a phoenix.

"Teacher Lin is a cultured person, how could we make Teacher Lin stay in this poor mountain nest of ours? Hurry up and grow up, after growing up, get out of this Ba Jiao village of ours and then you would be able to see Teacher Lin."

I was suffocating from my broken heart, as I said while choking: "I just can't bear to part with Teacher Lin."

No matter whether you like it or not, what ought to come will always come. That day when Teacher Lin was to leave, the snow uncle also became bigger, feathers-like snow fluttered in the wind, capable of removing all footprints, wiping them clean. I insisted on sending off Teacher Lin to the village entrance, where Teacher Lin would sit in the car that had come to pick her up.

"Huang Jingyang, you need not send me off. You must have faith in Teacher Lin, after sometime I will come and see you." Teacher Lin handed her favourite hat to me, while snowflakes fell down on to my body.

I didn't speak, just kept forcefully moving forward.

"Teacher Lin, you had better let him send you off. He will not go back without sending you off." Grandpa knew my temperament the best.

As regards Teacher Lin, tears were flowing from her eyes unprohibited.

“Huang Jingyang, you must listen to your Grandpa. You must study well, and in the future get out of this Ba Jiao Village!”

“Teacher Lin, I will seek you out in the future.”

“Good. Teacher Lin will be waiting for you.”

The wind on that day was particularly strong, whistling and whinnying.

An SUV stopped in front of the village entrance, its exhaust was constantly emitting white smoke.

“Master, the mountain road ahead is very bad, go a bit slow.” Grandpa especially walked up to the Master driving the car to say loudly.

At this time, the car’s rear door opened, and from the car, man got out.

It was actually Cui Chenlin!

I was stunned! Teacher Lin was also shocked!

We didn’t expect in the slightest for Cui Chenlin to come at this time.

All of a sudden, I firmly pulled Teacher Lin by her hand: “Teacher Lin, don’t be afraid. I will protect you!”

Cui Chenlin still looked as sinister as the last time, with that gloomy and cold qi on his body having become even denser. His two eyes were completely different from that of a normal person, it seemed as if the insides of his eye sockets had completely become black.

Smiling towards Teacher Lin, he said laughing: “Lin Jing, knowing that you were returning today, I especially came to pick you up.”

Teacher Lin was worried about me the most, as she squatted down besides me before saying into my ear: “Huang Jingyang, you return with Grandpa first. I will take care of everything.”

However at this time, my mental state had already gone awry. Fear, Anger, etc. all kind of negative emotions was making my my mental state very disorderly. All around my body, a gigantic vortex began forming. All kinds of primordial qi from the sky were being drawn into the vortex. The snowflakes there were falling from the sky without any pattern, had suddenly started revolving.

“Ah!” Cui Chenlin was startled upon seeing the white vortex around me.

Without any prior indication whatsoever, a muffled thunder sounded out in the sky. It goes without saying that Winter doesn’t have much thunder, let alone it occurring on a snow day. However, today without any basis muffled thunder echoed in the sky. There was no lightning, there was no warning.

“I won’t allow this!”

I suddenly shouted in a loud voice.

From my body suddenly leapt out, several bluish silver arcs, naturally these were arcs of electricity.



“Ah!”

I shouted while tightly clenching my fist.

Cui Chenlin rapidly retreated in shock, with the thought of escaping this crisis. However, the lightning was faster than the speed of his escape. A streak of lightning descended from the skies, and directly hit Cui Chenlin. Even though Cui Chenlin was a sorcerous cultivator, but his abilities were only so-so. Being struck by lightning would not have much great of difference compared to an ordinary person. Only, he wasn't that easy to get rid of, but his crimes were also hard to take. Fortunately, although the thunder and lightning looked very imposing, their might wasn't that particularly powerful. Cui Chenlin was stunned by the electric shock, but it wasn't life threatening. He stiffly collapsed onto the ground, with the electricity on his body forming a black lump on his back.

I also stiffly collapsed onto the ground, losing consciousness.

“Teacher Lin didn't go that day, kept watch on for several days right here. Her family called lot of times urging her to come back, and only today she returned. She said that she would come back after a few days. Next year, she will come to teach in Ba Jiao Village.” As I opened my eyes, Grandpa was rambling on in my ear.

However, the following several days, I also didn't see Teacher Lin's silhouette appear near the Village entrance. I went to the village entrance every day to have a look, with the hope of receiving Teacher Lin.

My everyday life once again fell back into its old routine. Feeding poultry and livestock every day, going to the mountains to find firewood, and overturning the very thick layer of snow to pull out hogweeds.

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 17

## Harvest

As the Chinese New Year approached, the villagers became lively. The people who had been working outside were returning home to celebrate the new year. There were a lot of people handling wine in the village. Everyday, one would be able to hear the sound of firecrackers. This was the atmosphere of the Chinese New Year.

Anyways, my Mama and Papa had already called and said that they wouldn't be returning home for the new year this time. My Papa said that working overtime during the new year's time has tripled the wages, while the round trip fare for the whole family runs up to several thousand, if it were considered like this, then it actually wasn't worth it. In fact, I had already become accustomed. There was no year when there wasn't a variety of reasons and excuses used as pretexts. Perhaps I had begun to look forward to what kind of a trick they would use this year.

Grandpa was very angry: "Don't come back, just don't come back. We will celebrate on our own!"

Grandpa brought me out from the village branch secretary's home while smoking incessantly along the way. Only after reaching our destination, he threw away the cigarette: "Yang Yang, it is not easy for your father and mother to make money outside. Making a round trip requires buying tickets for at least three people, with the round trip costing more than about two thousand yuan. Also, it isn't possible for them to stay at home for a lot of days. It is really not worthwhile. Tomorrow, I will bring you along to the streets, to buy some clothes, and we'll again buy some food. We will have a very lively and fun new year.

"Grandpa, We'll take these chickens, ducks and geese and sell them. When the next year's spring arrives, we'll buy some more chickens, ducks to raise. This batch of chickens has laid down several eggs which can be hatched. We could also eat one or two during the new year's time." I knew that last year, Grandpa had used up all his money, and his financial situation was a bit tight. He most definitely doesn't have the means to do this new year's shopping.

Grandpa nodded: "My YangYang is very competent. The chickens, ducks and geese all look very good, every single one of them will most likely be profitable. Those three patterned pigs, will you be still feeding them?"

Those three pigs were all sows, I was already preparing to have them give birth to babies, so when that time comes, we won't have to go buy pigs.

"They can all be used for breeding. These pigs are in good health. In the future, their

offsprings will also be very good.” I said.

“En, also good. Then continue feeding. However, these three pigs have grown so big, their appetite is growing every day, it won’t keep being as easy as just pulling out hogweeds.” Grandpa somewhat anxiously said.

“Our family has so much land, if all of it is planted with rice crops, then we wouldn’t be able to eat all of it even if we tried. On the rear facing slope, the water released is insufficient for two rows of rice paddies. We might as well use it for planting corn and also varieties of sweet potato. As a result, not much hogweed would be used in feeding the pigs. Furthermore, we can also plant lots of radishes, which can also be used for feeding the pigs. If it still won’t do, then I will let them out and have them forage for food by themselves.” I had already thought these things through.

Grandpa caressed the back of my head: “Our family’s Yang Yang is really sensible.”

Moreover, altogether there were twenty three chickens, twenty three ducks and eleven geese. The chickens and ducks all weighed three-four jin each, while the geese weighed six-seven jin each. If it comes to selling them all completely, then it would need several days of hard work.

[Robin: Just a friendly reminder, 1 jin=0.5 kg (500 grams) or 1.1 pounds, if you’re not used to kilograms :)]

Taking close to twenty chickens, on Grandpa’s shoulder pole, would mean that he would be bent under the pressure, unable to move. However, I had a way, as I had done many times before, a good frame was fitted onto Old Yellow’s back, and the chickens were put into the frame. After that, we walked towards the town while pulling along Old Yellow.

In this day and age, seeing things carried on ox-back to be sold was a very rare thing.

“Old Mister, how did you train your ox so nicely that it is able to carry loads on its back?” Along the way, some people inquired like that.

“My grandchild frequently trains it, and it slowly became accustomed to it. My family’s ox is also very brave and not afraid of people, so it is unlikely to go crazy.” Grandpa said very proudly.

During the New Year’s time, a bus comes to the village to pick up people. However, people might not like taking so many goods. Grandpa and I couldn’t spend the money needed to go by taxi. Going to the town by foot was a journey involving many hours of walking. So we could only walk to the town somewhat ardently.

Old Yellow’s performance was very good, so at the halfway point, I rewarded him with a strand of primordial qi. Old Yellow immediately began running forward with a joyous expression.

The chickens raised by us were surprisingly big hearted, as even through the incessant shaking, they were surprisingly calm and peaceful. Occasionally, they would peek outside and look in surprise. The chickens, ducks and geese raised in our house were different from those kept by other villagers, they were very intelligent. However, I couldn’t keep holding onto to them without selling them. The expenses for Grandpa and myself during the New Year and for the next half year depends on them.

At last, we arrived in the town, although the streets were very crowded, seeing me pull an ox through, other people immediately gave way. Other people's cars honked incessantly. Although there were some who gave way, there were some who differed. My Old Yellow glared at them, as if it could trample down all those who blocked the way at any second. Do they dare to not give way? There was a saying about what happens when a car bumps into chinaware, but was there a saying about what happens when an ox bumps into chinaware?

By the time Grandpa and I arrived at the Trading market, it was already late, and we couldn't get a good location. So we could only stand in a comparatively remote location. Grandpa made me guard the animals, while he went around to find out about the market price. After a while, he came running back and cheerfully told me, "Today, the market price is quite good. Free range chickens like ours, are going for eight yuan per jin."

"Then we will sell for ten yuan." I said.

"Eh?" Grandpa was gobsmacked.

"You haven't seen that compared to chickens owned by others, our chickens look much more attractive. Compared to other people's chickens, the sales would definitely be more. Moreover, our family's chicken were never fed chicken feed, and have all been raised by feeding worms. They would definitely be much tastier compared to other people's chickens raised on chicken feed." I had noticed that if the chickens in the village and our chickens, were to be put together and compared, the difference would practically be enormous. Eldest Grandpa had also brought his chickens to be sold in the town a couple of days ago, and they were also bought at a rate of nine yuan per jin. Our chickens being sold at ten yuan per jin would still be quite cheap. Merely, the townspeople wouldn't be able to see that clearly.

"Uncle, how much are you selling your chickens for?" Sure enough, our chickens caught the eyes of someone very soon. The primary reason was also that Old Yellow was quite eye-catching.

"Ten Yuan a Jin." I said preemptively. I was afraid that Grandpa wouldn't dare quote such a high price.

"Little friend, don't talk rubbish. In the market, other people are selling at eight yuan a jin, and some can even be purchased at a bit cheaper rate of seven yuan a jin." That man thought that I was child, and continued criticizing.

"The chickens from our house are different from other people. Other people's chickens are fed with animal feed, but our house's chickens have never been fed animal feed for the entire duration that they were raised. You have a look at the feathers and the colour of the eyes of our house's chickens. Don't they look much better than those of other chickens? The feathers on their bodies are not only whole, they are also very glossy and shiny. Most importantly, you just look at these chickens' eyes, don't they look much more full of spirit than chickens of other people?" I asked.

"Hey, you kid are not so simple, eh. Do you really want to sell this chicken at ten yuan a jin?" That person still somewhat doubtfully looked at my Grandpa.

Originally, Grandpa didn't have any confidence, but after listening to what I said, he also

clenched his teeth: “Ten yuan a jin, not a fen less.”

[TLNote: Friendly reminder that Fen is to Yuan what Penny is to Dollars]

“For a great new year’s celebration, if one wants to buy, then must buy only the best. You look at this rooster, aren’t its feathers so brightly coloured? It is making ‘ao ao zhi’ sounds upon being grabbed, if one wants to use it as offering, then it would naturally be better. Last year, I had grabbed twenty chickens from here, the seller even added three to the lot. None of them are young, also from birth they have never fallen ill, have never been fed medicine. Usually they would be fed hogweeds mixed with rice bran, but primarily they would depend on themselves to go out and catch insects to eat. The flavour of this chicken compared to that raised by other families is definitely multi-fold. Ten yuan a Jin, you buy only chicken, at most the extra expenditure comes out to only a few yuan, but it absolutely worth it.” I got more and more engrossed with the activity.

“Uncle, how old is your grandson, eh. He’s too fierce, in the future he will absolutely be businessman material.” That man readily bought two chickens and handed over the money, and before leaving spoke several sentences praising me.

Grandpa was very happy upon hearing others praising me. His face was full of smiles. He had not thought that I would really be able to sell their chickens at ten yuan a jin.

Doing business was easier than writing on paper. With that old uncle taking the lead, the others felt that our house’s chickens were really different. The good things would not necessarily be the ones that are sold the cheapest, but they would obtain the most approval of others! When everyone thinks that your thing is good, then even if it is a bit expensive, it would still be acceptable.

In the blink of an eye, more than ten chickens had been sold. Sales exceeded six hundred. Almost enough capital for Grandpa to buy chicks, ducklings, goslings and piglets on the way back. Grandpa, who was very happy, went to the butchers market, and bought several jin of meat, in preparation to make a few pieces of cured meat. Moreover, he also bought some new year merchandise. Anyways, since the ducks and geese still remained to be sold, some things could be bought again later.

In the next two days, more than ten geese and twenty ducks had been sold. The sales were over a thousand yuan. Grandpa and me were very, very happy. Grandpa took me along to town to buy new clothes for me. Originally, Grandpa didn’t want to buy clothes for himself, however under my insistence, Grandpa also bought a suit of clothes and also a pair of leather shoes from the shoe store. Altogether, the expenditure amounted to a total slightly less than 500 yuan.

Originally, Grandpa was prepared to wait until the beginning of spring of the new year, to buy chicks and ducklings for raising. However, I noticed that chicks, ducklings and even piglets were selling on the market quite cheaply, so we bought them on the way back. This time we had bought thirty chicks and thirty ducklings. Also bought five little piglets. I deliberately chose a male pig, while the remaining were female pigs.

As a result, after buying these chickens and ducks, there was not much money left. However, Grandpa and I didn’t worry. We had all kinds of self-grown things to eat at home, also there were not many places of expenditure. Grandpa gave me 50 yuan, and allowed me to buy whatever I wanted. I was naturally reluctant to spend it, so pressed it

between a book and then hid the book under my pillow.

On the day before the new year's eve, Grandpa and I emptied the pond with the help of some villagers.

Thirteenth Uncle had come ten days before new year's, and on this day he had especially come over to help.

"Second Uncle, there are so many fish in this pond. Such big fish, what do you feed them?" Thirteenth Uncle said laughing.

"This you must ask Yang Yang, he cut grass for these fish every day. I haven't fed them anything. Maybe because this fish pond had been abandoned a long time ago, its water became fertile." Grandpa said laughing.

Eldest Grandpa, upon hearing this, couldn't stop laughing: "This is the first time I have heard of such a hypothesis. In my several decades worth of life, I have never heard of someone who relies on water fertility to raise fish. However, YangYang is indeed a lucky star. Your house's chickens, ducks, and geese, are all raised so well, I also heard that they were sold for several thousands of yuan. It is possible that the fish in this fish pond will also sell for a lot of money.

# **My Daoist Life - Chapter 18**





## Chapter 18 Foundation Establishment

Who would have thought that even in such a small fish pond, there would be so many fish, and moreover, each fish weighed about four-five jin.

“It is really too strange. In such a small fish pond there are so many fish unexpectedly. Moreover, each fish is so big. Ordinarily, one doesn’t get to see something like this, right?”

“Yang Yang cuts fish grass to feed the fish everyday, and also throws all kinds of things in the fish pond while feeding, you haven’t seen the hardships he goes through. Doesn’t matter if the sun is bearing down, or if rain is pouring, this child will go out to cut grass for the fish no matter what. Amongst the village adults, how many of them would be able to suffer hardships to the same degree as Yang Yang. Having come to know about it, are you all still jealous of the fish raised by him?”

“Precisely so. Yang Yang, this child is so young but knows how to manage the house.”

The villagers commented one after another, listening to them I felt quite proud. Grandpa was even more cheerful as he chuckled, while he took several packages of tobacco that had been given to him by villagers for the new year’s celebration.

This fish were sold for several hundred yuan. After this, Grandpa and I need not worry about the expenses for the coming year.

I couldn’t help much with the catching of fish, so I could only sit down at the corner and watch. Watch as the water slowly emptied, from within the water the fish were revealed. Seeing the catch, it seems the investment had really paid off. This was the will of the heavens which greatly rewards those who work hard. Apparently, I had come to a realization. The primordial qi in the world seemed to have become a soup that I was immersed in. I received the harvest of the favor of the heavens, but paid out the familial love of a mother and father. The affairs of time were as inevitable as the sun and moon, and could never be perfect. As I continued thinking, my mind suddenly became brightly illuminated. A strand of iridescent bright light entered my spirit altar. Countless strands of primordial qi integrated into my Dantian. The dense fog within my dantian slowly turned into the mouth of a spring. Spiritual energy condensed into a liquid drop. The fog within my dantian had unexpectedly condensed into a very small drop of primordial liquid. However, it was just another starting point for me.

It was only later that I came to know that from this moment onwards, I had truly entered the realm of Dao cultivation, and on this day, I had succeeded in establishing my foundation. This so-called Foundation establishment, lays down the foundation for cultivation. The establishment of the foundation implies that a person has truly become a Daoist. Unfortunately, I had neither a guide nor a teacher. I hadn’t walked a step, as making progress was very difficult at each step, instead I was very lucky. In this era, in the world, there were not a lot of people who were capable of becoming Daoists like me. This was my luck. However, I could no longer be the same as other children, I was treated

coldly by my parents. The heavens weren't perfect to begin with, I lost, but also gained.

Reaching this point, deep in my heart, I seemingly became even calmer. Earlier, no matter how much I tried to conceal it, within the depths of my heart I would always blame my parents. However, within this moment, I seemed to have become serene.

Fortunately, everybody's attention was on the incessantly jumping fish, and no one noticed my state at this moment. At an unknown point of time, heavy snow began to coalesce in the sky, and it seemed as if the snowflakes had gained eyes. Not even a single flake fell on me. Every time one came close to me, it would be very rapidly swayed away in mid-air.

I seemed to have entered a state that was a mystery of mysteries, making me forget all other matters completely. However, there was somewhat of a difference between this state, and the state which I had entered the first time. Previously, once I entered this state, my mind would be completely immersed within this state of mine, completely oblivious to the outside world's matters. However, this time, I remained very clear and conscious, I could clearly look at all the people, and bizarrely enough, as if I were flying in the skies, looking down at the earth from the skies, I was able to clearly see all the various kinds of feelings and expressions of the villagers of Ba Jiao village through my eyes. Each and every word spoken by them, I was able to clearly hear it through my ears.

[TLNote: If you find that "mystery of mysteries" jarring or oddly amusing, you might want to check out this link: <http://www.taoism.net/ttc/chapters/chap01.htm>. Actually, Lao Zi, has referred to the great mysteries of the Tao(Dao) as Mysteries within Mysteries, and having read Dao De Jing, I couldn't help but seek out the reference]

I could hear Thirteenth Uncle speaking: "This fish is really different. The strength is really great. It has the capabilities of a genuine wild fish. Those fish that are fed with feed, are absolutely incapable of comparison to it. These fish are so good, they can only be found in Yang Yang's fish pond. The fish are being sold, while priced so cheaply, everybody will benefit greatly. I will wait to buy a few. Bring it back and keep it in a water jar and slowly relish it. Eating a good fish fresh is worthwhile, smoked fish doesn't have that kind of a taste.

"Bring the biggest fish for me, I want it!"

The villagers seemed to all of a sudden have discovered the benefits of these fish, everybody was scrambling to buy them. The selling price of these fish was not at all high. After all, these were all people from our own village. If the price was set too high, then it would lead to much back-bitching. Such good fish, were being sold at the same price as that of ordinary pond fish, they didn't have any reason not to rush to buy, also fortunately a few days before the pond was to be emptied, Grandpa spread around the news. A lot of people were waiting for my house's pond to be emptied. Unfortunately, my Grandpa didn't know how many fish the pond actually contained. In the village, some people, who were worried that they wouldn't be able to buy a fish, had already bought some in advance. These people today were left with no time for regrets.

"If I had known that there were so many fish in this pond, why would I have bought so many fish before. If such kinds of fish are turned into dried fish, they would be somewhat even more delicious to eat." Eldest Grandpa felt it was too late for regrets.

"Eldest Brother, you don't need to sigh. Consider this fish, as Yang Yang's show of filial

piety for you, you take this back home and make dried fish, it won't be an issue how long you eat." Grandpa grabbed a four-five jin carp from the big cask and handed it over to Eldest Grandpa.

"Won't do, won't do. How could I consider myself the Eldest Grandfather, if I eat the fish raised by my Grandson for free, when YangYang had to wake up early morning everyday and muck about in the darkness for it. These fish are already being sold at such a cheap price, everybody has already taken Yang Yang's face. This money necessarily needs to be given. You give this money to Yang Yang to buy some more clothes for himself. Yang Yang, this child, has been wronged. If I were to come across ZhengYou (Huang ZhengYou= Huang JingYang's father), then I shall properly scold him without a pause. Such a well-behaved obedient kid, but those parents don't even show any concern in the slightest, what kind of parents can be they be considered to be? Even wild beasts look after their children, I want to ask ZhengYou where exactly his conscience went?"

"That's right, everyone said that YangYang has bad luck, and is a messenger of death. However, from that time onwards, when looking at the things Yang Yang has accomplished, who amongst the village children can compare to him? If he brings misfortune, then who would dare to claim that they bring fortune? It needs to be said, that feudalistic superstition can really be the end of a human being. Yang Yang, this intelligent child, was precisely harmed by this feudalistic superstition." Thirteenth Uncle came to my aid and defended me.

The villagers' opinion towards me slowly began to change. The performance I had put out, had already exceeded their imagination. Their views naturally and gradually changed, but unfortunately, I could only change the people in my village. My Papa and Mama still didn't care that they left me behind in this mountain village.

The mysterious state hadn't managed to last long, I had already sobered up. Interestingly enough, although I had managed to extricate myself from that condition, the primordial qi was still circulating in a loop within my meridians, and my dantian seemed to have become the main force for moving the primordial qi.

I suddenly felt an impulse, as I performed the 《Xing Yi Quan Five Fists》 straight up in an empty area. Every gesture and every motion, conformed to the Fist Intent.

Just performing one form, immediately caught the attention of the villagers.

"Quickly look, Yang Yang is doing shadowboxing!"

"What kind of boxing is this? I have never seen anything like this before. Could it be that Yang Yang is just randomly punching?"

"It's possible. I also think that Yang Yang is just acting randomly."

"Wrong. This boxing routine is so well practiced, it definitely cannot come out of randomly punching. I can see that this set of punches of Yang Yang is even more refined compared to that boxing master Xin Hua who came to our village many years ago to accept disciples.

"En. It's not bad. However, from where did Yang Yang learn Chinese boxing at such a young age?"

My Grandpa said proudly: “From where would what kind of a master come. He has actually studied from a book purchased from a street stall. As for what its name was, I don’t remember.”

“So to speak, Yang Yang does indeed have natural talent.”

Although Teacher Lin had gone away, I didn’t lag behind in my everyday calligraphy practice. Earlier, I had already learned to write three of the seal script characters “天” (Sky), “地” (Earth) and “雷” (Thunder), and bring out the charm in them while writing. At this time, after succeeding in establishing my Foundation, when I again set about to write seal script characters, I discovered that impressively enough, I was able to write “风” (Wind), “山” (Mountain), “泽” (Swamp), “水” (Water) and “火” (Fire), all in one breath. Even I found it somewhat hard to believe. Going from the earlier ‘Qi Sensing’ stage, to the Initial stage of Foundation Establishment, was definitely a huge leap. Having successfully crossed this threshold, I had already reached a higher level. If the Qi Sensing stage could be explained as looking up to a mountain, then at present, the view was just like looking at flat plains.

The moment the seal script character for “风” (Wind) was written, an inexplicable whirlwind suddenly began blowing in the room, while the 风 character that I had written kept spiralling in the air incessantly. I quickly jumped in an attempt to grab the “风” character, but who would have thought that this jump would lead me to directly crashing my head into the house’s ceiling beam. Fortunately, I hadn’t gone one hundred percent in terms of effort, the beam just issued a loud noise, and the roof trembled for a bit. And after a long time calmed down.

Unexpectedly, I suddenly had so much strength, and I hadn’t even noticed it till now.

I raised my head in annoyance only to see the “风” floating in the air just as before.

I didn’t dare to again attempt to jump after that piece of paper. At the moment, my control of my strength was not good. Therefore, I must slowly adapt to this sudden increase in power.

I shifted a stool over, and while standing on top of it, I took down that piece of paper with 风 written on it. This matter was really weird. I couldn’t understand why some things happened. Oddly enough, now matter how I wrote the simplified chinese characters, the charm of the seal script characters never emerged. What kind of secret did the seal script actually hide within it? I didn’t think about it too much. Because I still hadn’t reached the age where any matter must be seen through to the end.

During the new year’s time, quite frequently because of hosting joyous occasions, the county television stations would broadcast tv dramas on request. Performing plays set up on platforms like the earlier times. Naturally they would have some fame. The television station in the County would frequently put up Hong Kong and Taiwan Movies and TV Soaps. Hong Kong’s horror pieces were unexpectedly popular, and everybody also liked watching them. Some people on account of a happy occasion, would go to the TV Station to request horror pieces. This kind of a thing could also be said to be quite amusing.

# **My Daoist Life - Chapter 19**



## Chapter 19 Fireworks

Although the children on one hand would cry wanting to watch, on the other hand, they would cry while watching. Rare were the children who were not afraid of ghosts. Even though I was a Daoist, I was still at an age where I would tremble with fear. On the nights after watching ghost movies, I would only be able to sleep after covering myself in sheets. However, the next day in the night, would still sit up to watch the next episode of that broadcast.

A sign that was written on the zombie's face made me quite interested, didn't it somewhat look like those seal script characters that I write? The seal script character '雷' written by me, with possession of spiritual charm, can trigger thunder and lightning, the seal script character '风' was able to naturally give birth to wind. The seal script character '水' written by me, was able to trigger moisture in a localized area. The seal script character '火' written by me, was surprisingly able to transform into a raging conflagration. Did these characters written by me have any connection with my bronze medal? If a person is much more accomplished in cultivation, then would he be able to bring out much greater effect from these seal script characters?....

A lot of questions circled in my mind, but I wasn't able to comprehend a solution for these issues. On New year's eve, my parents called home, and spoke a few words to me, and after saying that telephone charges are too high, hastily hung up the phone. Their voices had already become fuzzy within my memory. Unexpectedly, my younger brother wanted very much to talk to me, but only he spoke in Mandarin, while I spoke in the Ba Jiao village dialect, and my younger brother wasn't able to understand what I was saying, and very quickly the phone was snatched by my parents.

Grandpa gave the yuan that he was holding to the village branch secretary lady, and then turned back home while pulling me along.

"Yang Yang, what do you want to eat for New Year? Grandpa will buy it for you." Grandpa asked.

"Grandpa, we already have things at home." I was feeling bitter in my heart, I didn't really have motivation for anything.

At this moment, the people from the village had started setting off fireworks. Every now and then, fireworks beautifully blossomed in the sky.

"Yang Yang, we'll also go release fireworks." Grandpa patted me on my shoulder.

The fireworks bought by Grandpa and I weren't as big as other people's, also they didn't go up as high. However, as far as I was concerned, it was already a luxury for the final new year celebration.

I quickly ran back and brought back a tube-shaped firework. Grandpa took a puff from the tobacco pipe and then helped me ignite the fireworks. Immediately thereafter, a white smoke starting coming out from the paper tube, and before long, the fireworks rushed out from the tube, heading towards the sky and finally, a \*bang\* could be heard as the

fireworks exploded, and a beautiful multicoloured flower bloomed in the sky.

While I was setting off the fireworks, my thoughts were running in a far away place. I was thinking that if I take the seal script character 火 (Fire) and use primordial qi to control it, and then use the seal script character 风 (Wind) to control the 火 character and keep it floating in the air, then when the 火 is made to explode, would it not be similar to these fireworks?

The firework tube in my hand had finished, but I was already no longer interested in continuing.

“What happened? Don’t you want to play?” Grandpa asked very surprised.

“I don’t want to play. Let’s save some for tomorrow.” I said while smiling.

Grandpa nodded, he also had a lot of work to do. At once he busily went about to do his work. Then, I ran to the open area next to the house, and straightaway used my finger to write the seal script character 火 (Fire) in the air. This 火 character unexpectedly remained floating in the air. The character 火 was composed entirely of primordial qi. I could feel that this 火 character was able to understand my thoughts, but when it came to moving this 火 character according to my will, it was still extremely difficult.

I once again began writing in the air, this time the seal script character 风 (Wind), the 风 character, just like 火, remained floating in the air in front of me, but the 风 was somewhat different, it was drifting in the air erratically. However, even so it was also capable of being interlinked with my thoughts. Suddenly, the 风 and 火 characters collided together. All of a sudden, the 火 character began burning like a fiercely raging flame, and very soon thereafter exploded.

Hong!

An intense blast of wind threw me onto the ground, I had almost succeeded in becoming the first daoist cultivator to die at the hands of his own dao technique. Fortunately, I am a person at the stage of Foundation establishment, with an agile body and possessing sharp reactions. This was already quite extraordinary compared to a normal person. At the moment when the explosion occurred, I was already in the middle of dodging, only it was somewhat late, and I was thrown back flying all the way. Flying through the dried paddy fields rolling several times, while chewing on several rice straws that had made their way into my mouth, however it didn’t matter one bit.

When 火 and 风 collided together, an explosion had occurred and several tens of feet above in the sky, suddenly an extremely beautiful flower burst forth in the sky, staying in the sky for no less than 2-3 minutes.

In the entire village, a lot of people had seen this scene. They all thought that our family had set off a new variety of firework, not really expecting that this was me experimenting with Daoist techniques.

On the first day of the lunar new year, my classmate, the big fatty classmate Huang Shulang was panting as he came running to our house, and shouting out a loud new year’s greeting, and at once ran to my house’s room in the front, then back of the room, trying to search everywhere.



“Bark Bark Bark!” Black Bean thought that classmate Huang Shulang was up to no good.

Huang Shulang jumped in fright from Black Bean.

“Huang Jingyang, you are still not calling back your dog. If he bites me, then your family will have to pay compensation.”

I laughed happily: “Who let you sneak around in our house, he must have been thinking that you were trying to steal something?”

“My father is a butcher, our family has a lot of money, everyday we have meat to eat. Why would I have a need to steal something from your house? I want to see which brand of firework that you set off last night, our family wants to buy the same for next year.”

Huang Shulang said.

I took out the fireworks bought by us for Huang Shulang to see, “Here, all are here.”

“Not this one, it was that big firework that stayed in the air for several minutes. It made a nice loud noise, and it looked just as amazing as those fireworks shown on television. No, rather it was even more amazing than the fireworks shown in the TV. Fireworks shown in the TV also cannot remain in the year for such a long amount of a time. This is definitely a new technology.” Speaking of Huang Shulang, although one wouldn’t be able to tell even one bit, he was the resident last-ranker of our class. He didn’t flunk class but remained the first person from the last in class rankings. When he dropped to our class, he was unexpectedly still capable of holding onto the position of first person from the bottom, enabling the teachers and students both to have a fresh outlook on life.

“There are no others, just this one. How would my family have enough money to buy big fireworks?” I naturally knew that what the fatty was talking about was my final “firework”, but this thing, I naturally couldn’t disclose. If I speak of it, would the villagers still not take me as a monster?

Since I had experienced matters that others weren’t capable of even imagining, I had to be much more deliberate and thoughtful compared to my peers.

“Impossible, everybody in the village saw it! Those flowers were so beautiful. I have grown so big, but have never seen fireworks as attractive as these, such a pity it was only once.” Huang Shulang said with a sigh, his eyes were full of longing.

However, this thing I won’t speak about, Fatty you can just hide your intoxication once and for all.

The people in the village also continued to talk about this, they first thought that the fireworks had been set off by our family, but later they realised thought that these kinds of fireworks were definitely not possible to have been sold in the the town, and even if there were sellers, my family wouldn’t have had the money to buy. So, it was impossible for this firework to have been set off by my family. Later on, all the children in the village came to our house to inspect and verify the spot, confirming that indeed our family had not set it off, because each one was able to find only the firework of the paper tube type.

Since the possibility of fireworks being set off had been excluded, the possibilities that remained were somewhat mysterious. The elders of our village said, that for something to be capable of appearing like a bright firework, it certainly wouldn’t be simple. It’s possible

that that place has some sort of a treasure. When treasures are unearthed, visions appear. This time everyone suspected that this fireworks phenomenon was due to the jewel light coming from the unearthing of a treasure.

Certainly it was also possible that there was no treasure unearthed, and was rather the mischief of an evildoer. This theory also had comparable takers, a lot of people in the village treated my circumstances of not speaking for two years continuously to be unusually profound and mysterious. Everyone said that the 'feng shui' of our house was not good, just now such a thing happened. This time also such kind of a marvel appeared, which so happened to verify the villagers point of view. My family's residence had probably been affiliated to inauspicion.

Certainly, someone who has read a few books, or has received benefit of culture, would think that those aforesaid two kinds of opinions were just feudalistic superstitions. One must emphasize science. They believe that this must be a wildfire, or possibly a methane gas combustion, and thus, there was no need to make a fuss about nothing.

This last explanation didn't have many takers. Although wildfire was terrifying, it didn't seem to match with what people saw on the new year's eve. Even if there were methane gas underground, it definitely couldn't appear like fireworks upon combustion.

# **My Daoist Life - Chapter 20**



## Chapter 20 Placing Order

After the New Year's celebration, it seemed as if time had accelerated. In a flash, the lantern festival arrived which meant the start of the new term. Teacher Lin had not yet appeared. I had gone to the primary school many times, and there were no signs of activity in the school.

Although that big "firework" on New Year's Eve had almost frightened me to death, it also made me find a new joy. Of course, I wouldn't dare to again set off a similar great "firework", but there was no harm in trying out all sorts and varieties of seal script characters. Nowadays, not even paper or brush is needed, and I can just use finger to trace them out in thin air. However, it's not possible to succeed everytime, after all, I am unable to succeed every time even with the paper and brush, moreover the success rate is not high. Tracing out characters in thin air is still even more difficult.

The 水 (Water) character is one which I managed to draw out successfully, as it remained floating in the air, the air in the surroundings immediately became moist, and very quickly, a sparkling ball of transparent rain water began condensing in the air. This water was even clearer than well-water. Under the azure sky, it looked like a spherical azure crystal. On the outside layer, the layer of water flowed like liquid metal. Sunshine, when passing through this ball of water, refracted into a rainbow. Too beautiful! I was enchanted by this beautiful thing that I had formed.

"Yang Yang!" Grandpa upon not seeing me, shouted out for me in the yard.

I naturally wouldn't do these kinds of things out in the open, and was instead hiding behind the fruit trees located at the back of our house.

I felt panicked in my heart, naturally the control over the seal script character became a mess. That ball of water came down with a pop, and upon hitting the peach tree besides me, splashed water in all directions, leading to me ending up dripping wet.

I walked out somewhat annoyedly.

"You, this kid, how did you end up dripping wet?" Grandpa who saw me completely soaked from top to toe, immediately began grumbling.

"Don't blame this on me. Just now when I had gone into the forest, a lump of snow which hadn't melted suddenly fell down onto me. I was wet by the time I heard a sound." I naturally didn't dare tell the truth.

"Is there any snow on the trees?" Grandpa looked at me with suspicion. Within the village by this time, all the snow had almost finished melting. Only the roofs in the northern side had some sporadic snow. Moreover, the leftover snow from the snow day had been stacked up in a corner, or had been piled up into heaps by children. Teacher Lin and I had also piled up that Snow man, even after I scamper in all directions repeatedly to come up with snow to patch it up, but it looks like it would still be very difficult for Teacher Lin to return to the village.

“There was snow, blocked by tree leaves, which hadn’t melted. How could I have known that it would suddenly fall down when I walked underneath it. You are shouting incessantly, but if I hadn’t been running so fast, then I wouldn’t have gotten hit.” I said grumbling.

Grandpa also didn’t pursue the issue of whether there was snow or not atop the trees.

“Did you complete your winter vacation’s school assignment? Enrollment must be done right away, if you don’t finish your school assignment, then when the time comes, the Teacher won’t enroll you.” Grandpa asked.

My face darkened, if Teacher Lin didn’t come back, then would I ever encounter any teacher that would treat me the same way as Teacher Lin?

Grandpa was obviously aware of my thoughts: “YangYang, Teacher Lin is a city person, even more she is a cultured person, how could it be possible for her to stay in our poor mountain ditch of a village for a whole lifetime? I had heard Mr. Han say that Teacher Lin had originally been sent by the Education bureau provisionally. Maybe this term they will send an official teacher.”

“I know.” I was not interested in this topic, thinking about such facts only made me sad. However, in my heart, there was still hope that Teacher Lin would come back.

I recalled the snow man that Teacher Lin and I had built, and secretly thought in mind, “Perhaps if the snowman is allowed to melt, Teacher Lin would come back.”

In fact, I was actually very worried that Teacher Lin would leave me and go far away so that I would be able to see her anymore in the future, just like my parents.

Grandpa was preparing to take advantage of the weather which had started becoming nice and warm. Going down to the fish pond to block the culvert, and closing off the pond water, and waited for the fish to sprout, so it can be used to breed fish. This fish pond last year had brought tremendous benefit to me and Grandpa. This year, we were prepared to go all out.

“Second Uncle, it’s so cold today, how are you able to go down into the water? Didn’t you have foot disease? If by chance the illness festers, then how would you maintain your entire farmland?” Thirteenth Uncle said while facing Grandpa who was labouring in the fish pond while he squatted ashore besides the pond.

“Cheng Golai, you first go have a seat in the room. I will just finish this in a short while. You need not worry about my foot illness. I don’t know how, but my feet haven’t suffered from the illness this year. As if they are already well.” Grandpa only then noticed that his leg illness had already gone away without him being even aware of it.

“Well? This your old illness, how could it become well so easily?” Thirteenth Uncle asked in disbelief.

“Did you not want your Second Uncle’s feet to get well?” Grandpa was not happy with the way Thirteenth Uncle was looking.

“It’s not that, Second Uncle, I had no such thoughts. I was just anxious whether your leg illness might have flared up?” Thirteenth Uncle quickly explained.

“Why so tense? Your Second Uncle has still not gone senile! Go, sit inside the house.” Grandpa smiled as he washed the mud off his feet, before coming to the shore, putting on slippers and immediately walking towards home.

While entering through the door, Grandpa yelled out to me: “Yang Yang, pour some tea for your Thirteenth Uncle.”

“Yang Yang, no need to pour tea, it’s not the first time I have come to your house.” Thirteenth Uncle pulled me to his side. “Yang Yang, you have grown so quick. You look like a 10 year old kid.”

“His laziness has also grown.” Although these words came out of Grandpa’s mouth, the words were infused with pride.

“You, this kid, such a young boy, how did you manage to understand so many things? You even know how to raise pigs, ducks, geese and even fish. Even the grownups in the village wouldn’t know more than you. Tell your thirteenth uncle, do you miss your Papa and Mama?”

I tightly pursed my lips, and also didn’t nod.

“You shouldn’t blame your Papa and Mama too much, it’s not easy for them to live outside. If one goes in search for job outside from our village, not being literate, one can only do physical labour to survive. The wages are also not high. Your parents have even brought your younger brother there, the pressure upon them is tremendous. Everyday they are needed to work overtime. Working overtime during the new year gives overtime wages in addition to red envelope. Do you really believe they do not think of coming back? They also think.” Thirteenth Uncle patted me on my shoulder.

[Robin: I had no idea what a red envelope was, if you’re as ignorant as me, here you go![https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Red\\_envelope](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Red_envelope)]

Thirteenth Uncle had come to our house mainly to help take my parent’s things. Years ago, Grandpa had smoked some good bacon, and had also air-dried some ducks. Two live chickens had been placed into a cardboard box in preparation. There was also a large sack chocked full with Ba Jiao village’s local produce.

“It really is embarrassing that making you carry so many things over. However, they were the ones who committed wrong remaining outside. Without passing over, I felt somewhat uneasy.” Grandpa somewhat embarrassedly said.

Thirteenth Uncle promptly said: “Second Uncle, where is the need for all these words. We also have a lot of people going, the car is prepared and ready to be packed. This little bit of things will just occupy a bit of space in the car that’s all. The car will go directly to our house. Seventh Elder Brother will come at that time to take them. I wouldn’t need to waste even the slightest bit of energy.”

“This cured duck is for you. Yang Yang’s raised duck, it tastes good, and you should also try.” Grandpa used another plastic bag to pack a duck.

Thirteenth Uncle glanced around in the house, he would naturally know that this big sack of things is already this family’s entire belongings.

“What are you saying, Second Uncle? We are one family, what is the need for doing this? Although me and Seventh brother are not blood related, we are not really that different from blood brothers. If you are like that, then I won’t take these things for you. You can give them to whomever you’d like to pass it on.” Thirteenth Uncle said angrily.

“Thirteenth Uncle. This fresh duck is really to let you taste it. It’s flavour is really distinct. You need not worry about me and Grandpa not having things to eat at home. During the new year’s time, I bought a lot of chickens and ducks from the town on the way back. There are also several hens in the house, that have started to lay eggs. Later on, I will have eggs to eat with Grandpa every day. We also have a lot of cured fish in the house.” I said hastily.

“Silly kid, still saying that you do not miss your father and mother. Clearly this bears a lot on your minds. Ok, I will accept this duck. Your father and mother were not at home, there wasn’t anybody who would have given you new year’s money. Last year, you came first in the final exam, so take this reward from your Thirteenth Uncle.” Thirteenth Uncle took fifty yuan out from his pocket and squeezed them into my hand, “Add oil to your studies. After growing up, you must move away from Ba Jiao village. For us people in the village, studying is the only way out. Otherwise you can be like our generation’s people, and do coolie work outside.”

I didn’t want to take Thirteenth Uncle’s money, Thirteenth Uncle said unhappily: “If you are not willing to take Thirteenth Uncle’s money, then thirteenth uncle will not pass on the things to your Papa and Mama. Also, I won’t take your cured duck meat.”

I was somewhat hesitant. Grandpa spoke at this time: “You need to accomplish a lot. Yang Yang, you accept it. Remember your Thirteenth Uncle’s words. You must study well.”

On the day when Thirteenth Uncle was to go to Guangdong, Grandpa and I took Old Yellow to see off Thirteenth Uncle to the town.

“Second Uncle, Yang Yang, you can go back. Yang Yang, you must listen to what your Grandpa says. Must strive for excellence, and in the future must gain admission to a University.” Thirteenth Uncle patted me on my shoulder.

I followed Grandpa as we both walked back with our mouths sealed shut. I didn’t know what to say. After seeing off Thirteenth Uncle, there was a somewhat empty feeling in the heart.

“Ai, ox puller, ox puller.” A forty-fifty year old middle-aged man chasing after us while calling in our direction.

Grandpa and I stopped.

“Uncle, I want to ask you one thing.” That middle-aged man came forward, while giving a cigarette to Grandpa.

“What thing?” Grandpa asked.

“This lowly one is called He Dachao. Last year, weren’t you the one in town who sold several free-range chickens in cages?” He Dachao introduced himself.

“Indeed, why?” Grandpa asked somewhat puzzledly.



“Old Sir, you need not worry. I just wanted to ask if your house has some more free-range chicken to sell? I have opened a restaurant in the town. I bought several chicken from your hands on that day. Do you still remember?” He Daochao’s body was a bit chubby, and as he smiled, he looked someone easy to be close to.

I immediately thought: “Indeed, you were the first person who bought our chickens.”

“Right Right Right, it was me.” He Dachao nodded.

“Now what? Do you want to buy more chickens? However, our family altogether had raised twenty or so chicken. All sold out now. The lot being raised from the New year’s time has still not grown up.” Grandpa said.

“No problem, No Problem. I will give you my phone number. When your chickens are grown up, you call me. I will buy your free-range chicken raised by you at a high price. Also, they must be as good as those I bought last year.” He Dachao said.

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 21

## Chapter 21 Teacher Lin Returns

He Dachao gave Grandpa his business card, while he looked at our ox.

“Why not sell this ox of yours, I will pay a high price.”

Without waiting for Grandpa to reject, Old Yellow had already become unhappy.

“Moo!”

Old Yellow’s eyes had turned red all of a sudden, the eyes opened wide, and his body angled downward slightly, all the while his two eyes pointedly stared at He Dachao. Fully prepared to charge and treat He Dachao’s illness at one stroke.

“Don’t move!” I patted a strand of primordial qi on Old Yellow’s head, enabling Old Yellow to calm down.

“This ox we won’t sell. It is the main labour force of our house.” Grandpa hurriedly shook his head.

He Dachao was terrified of Old Yellow as his entire body trembled, not daring to move needlessly. This kind of imposing manner was really not something that an average person can handle.

As soon as I pacified Old Yellow, the pressure on He Dachao’s body loosened. His body had already become drenched with sweat. Unexpectedly, he was sweating all over his body out of fright.

“How is this an ox? It is a Bull Demon King. The Bull Demon King was unexpectedly planning of striking me just a moment ago.” He Dachao muttered.

Old Yellow was very eye-catching in the town. Wherever it went, it would attract onlookers. The ox without a tow-rope around its head, was following honestly an old man and a kid, with several baskets strapped to its back. This kind of a situation was really somewhat weird.

“Our house is really too small, there’s insufficient area for raising all the chickens, otherwise, would be able to raise a bit more chickens, and definitely earn a lot more money.” I said.

“This is not really such an easy matter. The biggest fear while raising chickens and ducks is that of them falling sick. If one becomes unwell, then death comes in large numbers. Even the initial capital invested would not be returned. The batch raised by you last year was completely due to luck.” Grandpa said.

In fact, Grandpa didn’t know that the chickens, ducks, geese and the fish in the pond

raised by me, didn't really rely on luck, rather on the primordial qi that I was able to control. With primordial qi, these chickens, ducks, geese and fish naturally wouldn't fall ill, and under the incitement of primordial qi, their growth rate also became much faster compared to general poultry.

"Raising this many is already good. If we are able to raise one-two batches in one year, then we can enjoy a profit of 1000-2,000 yuan. In addition, the ducks would always be good several thousand in an year. As soon as the sows give birth, we will have two litters full of piglets and a large sum of money." Grandpa was already very satisfied with the income, but to me, it felt insufficient. Because I had even bigger goals.

"Grandpa, look. Our house is emitting smoke!" We still had not arrived at the village, but from afar, I could notice the smoke rising from our house.

Grandpa also panicked after seeing this: "Oh no, I'm afraid that at this time of the year, the firewood in the kitchen stove wasn't covered up properly, so it caught fire due to the temperature."

I followed Grandpa as we both ran towards home in leaps and bounds.

Arriving at the courtyard, I was stunned speechless. At my house's entrance, was a person who I had been thinking of day and night.

"Huang Jingyang, what are you gawking at? Come in quick!" The speaker was naturally someone whom I hadn't seen since winter vacation, Teacher Lin.

"Teacher Lin!" I quickly rushed up, and tightly embraced Teacher Lin. Naturally, with my height I could only reach up to Teacher Lin's hips, with my head leaning on her belly.

Teacher Lin also embraced me, and gave me a kiss on my cheek: "It's been so long, I was afraid something bad had happened to you."

Grandpa arrived in the courtyard gasping for breath, upon seeing the scene before him, he naturally understood what was going on.

My house's key was hidden in the crack in a wall. Teacher Lin naturally knew. She saw that we hadn't come back, so she was boiling water to prepare food.

"Teacher Lin, I didn't think that I would be able to see you again later." I said somewhat moved with emotions.

"Teacher Lin said that she would come as soon as possible, naturally she would honor her words." Teacher Lin said with a smile.

Only now did I carefully examined Teacher Lin, compared to before, Teacher Lin's complexion was much better, and looked much brighter and colourful.

"Little fellow, obviously staring at a girl like that is not very polite behaviour." Teacher Lin gently blew on my nose.

After Teacher Lin returned, my life suddenly seemed to have turned from black and white television, to coloured television.

"That day....." I remembered what I had done on that day.

"That day you really scared Teacher Lin. Cui Chenlin returned home, and remained in the

hospital for a short while, there was not much else to it. I was originally ready and prepared to come see you, however the heavy snow sealed off the road. Afterwards, I telephoned the village chief's home, and after hearing that you were already alright, I put down my heart." Teacher Lin said.

"How come I didn't hear from the village chief that you had called?" I felt somewhat baffled.

"Maybe he forgot." Teacher Lin wasn't bothered much by this insignificant issue.

"Oh no!" I slapped my forehead.

"What happened?" Teacher Lin asked.

"All the delicious stuff in the house, has already been sent off to my parents in Guangdong. In the house there is nothing delicious to eat. I will go catch some fish and come back." I walked towards the door after having finished speaking.

Teacher Lin pulled me by the hand: "How long wouldn't that take. By the time you come back from catching fish, my belly would have already gone flat from hunger."

"Then what should we do?" I didn't know what would be good to do at the moment.

"Nothing. On my way here, I bought some vegetables from the town. The food is already ready. Take a look at Teacher's handiwork and see if it hasn't progressed." Teacher Lin pulled me to the dining table. On the table, several types of dishes were placed, and the dishes were covered with several small bowls which were placed upside down. Opening one small bowl, the dish in the bowl immediately released steam.

"Woah!" I shouted excitedly. This was my favourite dish. Actually I had never been picky about food, of course, in this day and age, meat was more popular. Especially, in a small mountain village like Ba Jiao Village.

Seeing me so excited, Teacher Lin was also very happy, and served a big bowl a rice to me: "Eat quickly, eat lots and grow up."

Teacher Lin brought a lot of books for me, out of which there were many copybooks for seal script.

[TLNote: [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Copybook\\_\(calligraphy\)%5D](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Copybook_(calligraphy)%5D)

"Teacher Lin, did that person still come to look for you?" I asked suddenly.

"Children should stay out of the matters of adults." Teacher Lin gently tapped me on my head.

This sentence struck me hard, I am not a child, I am a man who is ready to grow up to be the man that marries Teacher Lin.

Teacher Lin seeing me scowl miserably, smiled and asked: "What happened?"

"Teacher Lin, you said that once I grow up, you would marry me." I was very gloomy.

"But you still haven't grown up." Teacher Lin again laughed while trembling from head to foot.

I was very worried, how long till I grow up? At this moment, I even remembered that

Grandpa had applied 920 to the farm crops. I heard that after application, the crops grow very quickly. Didn't know that if I sprayed it on my body, would I grow quickly too ? [Robin: I'm a bit confused about the "920" haha, perhaps Void can elaborate when we wakes up :)]

[TLNote: My guess is that it is some kind of fertilizer brand, because it was written in english by the Author as "920"]

I was still quite worried in my heart, that one day Cui Chenlin would come running over, and take away Teacher Lin from me. However, since that day unexpectedly, there had been no tidings about Cui Chenlin. Actually, something happened in Ba Jiao village, which was beyond people's expectations.

I had picked up the bronze medal from the Ba Jiao mountains. There were a few other audacious children who had rushed in to them, and brought out several ancient bowls from within the mountains. Although Ba Jiao village was very remote, it was not isolated. A lot of people who had ventured outside for adventure, knew that these ancient era porcelain bowls were called antiques. Antiques were usually synonymous with a lot of money.

The very first porcelain cup was picked up by the Ba Jiao village's stuttering child Ma Jindong. Ma Jindong's was born in a family which was foreign to Ba Jiao village. Ma Jindong's father, Ma Dakun, was a shut-in son-in-law. Ma Jindong's brother followed his mother, Huang Cuiying's family name, and was called Huang Jinwu.

Don't look at Huang Shulang's fatty body. This fellow was really of dirty reporter material. Remaining well-informed of the news. In the school, Huang Shulang vividly described the matter of Ma Jindong picking up porcelain cup from within the Ba Jiao Mountains.

"I heard some time back that within Ba Jiao Mountain lies the grave of an official from a very wealthy and great family, with are a lot of funerary objects. Possibly due the ground sinking down a bit, these funerary objects are emerging directly from the ground. My father said, these things can be worth a lot of money. Ma Jindong's luck is really good. If I had picked it up, our family would have gotten really rich." Huang Shulang was dying of envy.

Because of the thing with Ma Jindong, villagers had all secretly begun going to Ba Jiao Mountain, all in hope of being able to pick up some valuable antique from the Ba Jiao mountain.

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 22

## Chapter 22 Getting worse and worse

Grandpa was also somewhat excited, while eating, he would always talk about how by now, this and that person from Ba Jiao Mountain had returned after picking up some things. I could tell from his expression that in fact, he really wanted to go.

“Uncle, what the villagers are doing is illegal. Since what has been excavated are historical relics, they belong to the nation. If any person is found in possession of any of those items, then it is considered a violation of the law. If in the future, the National Heritage Department comes to know, then it would require them to pay to the government.” Teacher Lin understood this policy aspect.

“Oh? Do even derelict things need to be handed over to the state? Ba Jiao mountain naturally is the tomb of our Ba Jiao Village’s ancestor. Don’t tell me that we Ba Jiao villagers can’t even inherit our old ancestor’s things?” Grandpa couldn’t understand this somewhat. Since the tomb on Ba Jiao mountain is our old ancestor’s, then those things inside the tomb ought to be taken by the people of Ba Jiao village. The posterity takes the ancestor’s things, isn’t that only natural?

At this point, Teacher Lin became confused: “That I am not sure about.”

“Grandpa, those things are not clean. If they are retrieved like this, then later there is possibility of mishap.” I said a sentence.

“Not clean?” Grandpa asked in surprise. He naturally is aware that I am not the same as an ordinary person. My words dispelled Grandpa’s original intentions.

I knew the reason why Grandpa wanted to go to Ba Jiao mountain to treasure hunt so badly. He was hoping to pick up several kinds of valuable objects, if in the future opportunity arose of them being purchased, then the money earned could be used to give the house a renovation. Although our house was a brick house, in the village the mainstream buildings are the several storied buildings. Our house seems somewhat short and small in the village.

The house in the rural area is a person’s most valuable family property. Some people go to Guangdong to take up work just with the sole desire of getting their house renovated.

I also wanted to double up the house to turn it into multi-storied building. This way, Grandpa would be able to live rest of his life in a beautiful house.

[Robin: God damn, this kid is adorable :i]

These kinds of thoughts of ours, would probably be somewhat incomprehensible to Teacher Lin. From her viewpoint as a city dweller, it would be difficult to comprehend

why a person from rural area would have these kind of thoughts.

Having eaten the meat, Grandpa with a very solemn expression asked me: “Did you really see that those things retrieved by the villagers are unclean?”

I nodded: “Really unclean.”

“How is that?” Grandpa tightly furrowed his brows.

“I too don’t know. I only know that those treasure retrieved are not clean, making me feel very sick.” I had went to look at the treasure retrieved by the villagers, the treasure brought back by them unexpectedly had black qi floating on it. Although the qi was black, it was still not the same as the cold and gloomy aura on the body of Cui Chenlin.

My theory was very quickly verified, however, the ‘verifiers’ were the poultry and livestock in the village. Therefore, it didn’t catch the attention of the villagers.

“Not good, Not Good, there’s been an outbreak of chicken plague in the village!” Grandpa returned from the outside while carrying a hoe, somewhat panicked.

“Grandpa, what happened?” Upon hearing Grandpa’s words, I put down my book and came out.

“The chickens in almost every household in the village have either died, or have begun flying around in disorder like crazy and dashing everywhere.” Grandpa looked somewhat worriedly at our own chicken coop.

“All died? Is it really chicken plague?” I was somewhat skeptical. Even if it were chicken plague, the chickens were dying too fast.

“If it isn’t chicken plague then what is it? This chicken plague spreads very fast. In a day, all the chickens in the village died.

“Are there no other possibilities? Has there been any careful examination, to know whether these chicken really died from chicken plague?” I asked.

“Why are you asking such a foolish question? If not died from the chicken plague, then has this been done by something else?” Grandpa asked.

“Quite likely. I am afraid that this is not chicken plague, rather it is that treasure retrieved by them.” I spoke out the worry that was distressing me.

“You are saying that those things are the root cause of this? Is it because those things are unclean?” Grandpa nearly didn’t yell out. He also had become absent-minded while saying this, as if this were indeed the case, then it was really terrible!

Grandpa had hurried back, as he was worried about whether his own house’s chicken coop had been affected. However at this time Grandpa’s expression had sobered up, if this really is the chicken plague, then how is it that his house’s chicken are not affected?

“Not good, I have to go to the village and talk to the people.” Grandpa hurriedly prepared to go remind the villagers.

“However, they won’t believe what you say!” I shouted out loudly towards Grandpa’s back.

“It’s beyond me to care about so many things, I have to tell them as soon as possible.” Grandpa went barefoot, as he ran quickly to the village.

“Huang Jingyang, you said unclean, what did you mean by that?” Teacher Lin asked as she came out.

“The villagers retrieved a lot of things from the Ba Jiao mountain, but these things had been buried underground for so many years, definitely have the earth’s aura within them, and some things are even unclean. If proper precautions are not taken at an early stage, then the problem will become big.” I said anxiously.

I also frequently paid attention to our family’s poultry and livestock, seeing them alive and kicking, I felt relieved.

After one-two hours, Grandpa returned walking frustratedly.

“Those people in the village have gone crazy, they didn’t believe what I said. They said that their families have picked up treasures, and in the future when they are sold for money, then they would earn much more than poultry and livestock. Even went on to say that I was jealous of them picking up treasures.” Grandpa let out a sigh, as he shook his head.

“Grandpa, you don’t need to take care of them. They chose their own path, where it leads to, is their own business.” I saw that Grandpa’s expression was not good, he was most likely subjected to a lot of anger in the village, and was still carrying some resentment in his heart.

“Cannot say like that. In this Ba Jiao village are there not several families which are related to us? Now that the entirety of poultry has died off, what will happen next, who is capable of anticipating?” Grandpa could only sit down under the eaves and smoke sulkingly.

The next day, a worrying thing happened again. All the pigs in every household died. All the fat pigs died simultaneously overnight. Moreover, on the pigs bodies aside from a bit of blackishness, there was no other abnormality.

“What to do about this, what should be done about this?” Grandpa came rushing into our house early in the morning.

“Just like you said yesterday, those things retrieved from Ba Jiao Mountain were unclean, but who believed me? Now already this much has happened, what can be done? Now we can only hope that this problem doesn’t affect a lot of people.” Grandpa let out a sigh, while helplessly shaking his head.

“At that moment, each and every household’s dog was barking incessantly, I realized at once that something was wrong. However, they all said that the things brought back from Ba Jiao mountain are all valuable treasures. Capable of being sold for a lot of money. Now that all the poultry and livestock are all dead, it is likely that everybody will feel even more complacent.” Eldest Grandpa said.

“However, who would have thought these unclean things could scourge through poultry, and scourge through livestock, and who’s to say that it won’t also scourge people?” Grandpa threw out a sentence that was enough to make anyone feel afraid.



“Yang Yang, can you tell if people will die or not?” Eldest Grandpa asked me anxiously while pulling me.

I shook my head: “I also don’t know. However, those unclean things are becoming more and more powerful.”

Obviously, I had already told Eldest Grandpa of my solution.

Eldest Grandpa relaxed his grip on my hand: “So what is to be done? Will it be okay if we now throw those filthy things back where they came from?”

Seeing me somewhat hesitant, Grandpa unhappily said: “Foul brat, at this moment human life is at stake. You still are acting like this, Grandpa will beat you up.”

“At the moment, aside from those retrieved treasures that have dirty things on them, those dead poultry and livestock need to be dealt with, and also the people who went to retrieve those treasures

“Things can be thrown away, those dead poultry and livestock can be disposed of, but what’s to be done about those people?” Eldest Grandpa said worriedly.

“I can give it a try.” I said.

I also thought, that when I picked and brought back the bronze medal, there were no problems, then why was it that when the villagers retrieved those treasures there were problems. What could be the reason behind it?

Although the villagers were already unusually keyed up, Eldest Grandpa’s actions, compared to Grandpa’s urgings earlier, went through much more smoothly. A lot of the families had already delivered the retrieved items back to the Ba Jiao Mountains, but they concealed it someplace so that depending on how situation develops, they could come back to retrieve these treasures.

However, there were a few families who would rather give up their life than their wealth. They feared that the things that were returned by them would later be stolen by someone else.

“Do you take us for fools? Now that the chickens and the pigs are dead, all are at risk, the poultry and livestock in the house are already dead. Now you want us to throw away these treasures, in the future what will I count on for securing my meal?”

“You can say whatever you like. Anyways, I won’t listen to your words. Likewise, I also won’t return these things.”

Grandpa came back to tell me: “In the village, there are a total of three households who are reluctant to return the things they retrieved from the mountains. The dead pigs and chickens are already being dealt with nicely. The villagers will later congregate and hold a meeting in the village. You can go take a look, and see if you can help them solve this problem.”

I didn’t know how the primordial qi within my body would fare against these unclean things, but as the matters stood, I could only bite the bullet and go.

Teacher Lin didn’t know what to say. This kind of a thing was completely beyond her world view. Although she knew from an early time that I was a child that stood out from

the masses, she still found it somewhat hard to comprehend some of my actions.

Grandpa was also extremely worried, that matter two years ago that had happened, was still quite vivid in his mind. He was worried that I, just like before, would fall into a comatose state.

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 23

## Chapter 23: A Mishap

This kind of a thing can naturally only be done covertly.

After waiting for the school day to finish, all those people who had touched those treasures retrieved from Ba Jiao Mountain were all brought together at Ba Jiao Primary School's campus. Everyone was sitting in the classrooms of the school which were packed to the brim. Many people not able to find a seat were directly sitting on the table.

The Village branch secretary Huang Lisheng was almost sixty years of age this year. There hadn't been held such a large-scale meeting in the village since a long time. Organizing such a large-scale event involving the entire village, made Huang Lisheng quite excited.

I had been staying at school without returning home, and eating dinner also in the school dining hall. Strangely enough, Teacher Lin also wished to engage in tonight's matter.

If it were in the past, with every household meeting in a conference, it would necessarily involve their children creating clamour. When it was time for village elections, then items like tobacco, melon seeds, etc. were prepared in advance. Otherwise, there was no way to ensure silence at the scene. Of course in the silence, one would be able to hear the sound of cracking of the melon seeds.

"Yang Yang." As soon as I appeared, villagers began calling my name. Life had its ups and downs, I remember that two years ago, when everyone saw me, they had a special look in their eyes. That specialness was a kind of contempt and fear. And today, there was another special look, this special look was that of reverence. In this feeling, only I was able to experience a profound realization. At this moment, the villagers had already forgotten how they had used to look at me. Now, they were waiting for me to resolve their crisis.

My state of mind was somewhat complicated. Being able to change the villagers viewpoint of me, it was impossible for my heart to be able to maintain its calmness. Certainly, cultivation has already made me go beyond the scope of ordinary people, making my frame of mind much more open-minded. Also making it impossible to wildly celebrate one's success like ordinary people.

I was able to clearly see the rich or insipid black qi from each and everyone present on the scene. Within this black qi was carried the deathly aura. I was able to finally sense the true nature of this aura! That was the death qi! If I cannot eliminate this death qi completely today from these villagers' body, then what would happen, could easily be imagined.

"Branch Secretary Lisheng, there are three households whose people refused to come and refused to send the objects back to the Ba Jiao Mountain. I tried my best to persuade, but

they were not willing to come.” The village’s family planning expert Liu Fangben hurriedly came over.

Huang Lisheng frowned: “Those old fools, they can give up their lives, but not part with wealth. But these people not coming is troublesome. In case something happens, it would not be easy to deal with.”

“But they also weren’t willing to listen to my well-intentioned words. These three households hadn’t raised many chickens, and hadn’t bred pigs, so therefore they are unable to understand the nervousness of other people. They are still clinging to wishful thinking.” Liu Fangben said.

“If they do not come, it is impossible for us to tie them up and bring them. We can only see if their fate is good.” Branch Secretary said as he arrived by my side.

“Yang Yang, how does it look, can it be started now or what?” I was asked.

“Almost everyone has come, but those three households refused to come over. If the others refused to come, it is impossible to force them. It would be against the law to force people.” Branch Secretary said.

I started expelling the death qi from everyone’s bodies. A strand of primordial qi, once poured into the villagers’ bodies, is able to easily drive out the death qi completely. Six separate classrooms, several hundred people. My body was unceasingly outputting primordial qi, but it could only be slowly replenished. In the beginning I didn’t feel anything, but with the passage of time, the primordial qi within my body became more and more sparse. I gradually began to feel somewhat strained. A large amount of sweat began to seep out of my forehead. My clothes were also soaked with sweat.

“Huang Jingyang, are you okay?” Teacher Link asked concernedly.

I sat down and shook my head, but didn’t speak. I wanted to conserve my energy.

Teacher Lin hurriedly took out her handkerchief. The handkerchief had a faint pleasant aroma.

Grandpa removed the sweat for me, but did not come forward to stop me. He knew that right now, human lives were on the line. However, wherever I went, Grandpa would also follow there.

The villagers didn’t know what I was doing, however they knew that I was not an ordinary child.

When I arrived at the last classroom, my body had already been exhausted from top to bottom, and was completely soaked in my sweat. The death qi after all was not sentient, and driving it away, didn’t have much difficulty. As long as one had primordial qi, one could completely eliminate this death qi.

Yet by this time, I had already become a spent force.

“This child, what happened?” Eldest Grandpa came over to ask Grandpa.

“Too tired. Hundreds of people.” Grandpa shook his head reluctantly.

“Yes, we gave this child a hard time.” Eldest Grandpa looked into my eyes.

I could hear the words that the Grandpas spoke, but I didn't want to open my eyes. I was too tired. I really wanted to have a nice good sleep. However, at the moment I could only wait for the slow recovery.

The streams of primordial qi running in my meridians had already almost dried up. The small primordial liquid whirlpool in my dantian had already almost returned to its previous mist form.

Receptive as an echoing canyon, throwing out the old, accepting the new. My meridians and dantian dried up, but after my meridians had suddenly dried up, it acquired massive amounts of space to accommodate new stuff. A large amount of primordial qi, as if attracted by some kind of mystical force, frantically entered my body, as if in a rush to leave the other behind in a race. [TLNote: Receptive as an Echoing Canyon (Idiom) = Self Explanatory, throwing out the old, accepting the new (Idiomish) = Reinvigorating]

And at this time, the primordial qi very quickly collected within my dantian. I could clearly feel that this primordial qi that had converged together, was unexpectedly even purer than before.

Breaking and rebuilding. Although I didn't understand the reasons for this situation, I found myself overjoyed with these circumstances, because I could already feel that my used up energy was being slowly replenished. The primordial qi all around was very sparse, and was very quickly absorbed into my meridians. Gathering primordial qi from distance places was even more straining, but even so, my crisis was temporarily alleviated.

Grandpa was frowning seeing me close my eyes, he wasn't aware of my situation, but he was able to surmise that I was very exhausted. Compared to the life of villagers, for him, my life held much more significance. He didn't want the villagers to have a mishap, but even more so he doesn't want me to be in any danger.

When I opened my eyes, Grandpa promptly asked: "YangYang, how are you? How about we return home."

Eldest Grandpa also was anxiously watching from the side, "Yang Yang, really cannot persevere any further? There are still so many people."

I looked at the villagers in the classroom, unable to tolerate it somewhat, said: "I, I will try again."

Eldest Grandpa sucked in a huge breath, he was worried that I would refuse.

"Yang Yang. Don't force yourself." Grandpa was worried that I will have a mishap.

I nodded.

Teacher Lin was also very anxious, she tightly held my hand. She was capable of seeing that what I was doing was certainly of great importance for these villagers. Although her eyes couldn't see the black qi, she could see the expressions of these people. The appearances of these people showed they were suffering. However, after undergoing my "treatment", suddenly they would seem a lot better. The people would also look a bit more vigorous.

I began using the replenished primordial qi that I had just amassed within my body to

carry on cleansing the rest of the villagers. By the time I had cleansed the black qi from the body of the last villager, I was already gasping for breath.

Teacher Lin took me up in her arms, somewhat anxious about my situation. She knew that I had been very terribly exhausted. With the knowledge imbued from those Wuxia films and TV series, it wasn't difficult for Teacher Lin to understand my current state.

Just as I was leaving, I heard the Family planning expert Liu Fangben say: "Those three households are still not willing to come."

Huang Lisheng waved his hand: "They themselves chose their own path. We have no choice. So be it!"

Huang Lisheng's voice gradually faded, the sound of Teacher Lin's slightly heavy footsteps seemed to be a rhythm urging me to sleep. My eyelids kept getting heavier and heavier, and when I opened my eyes once more, I only saw a beautiful face. Teacher Lin was looking at me, with a smile on her face.

"Slept well? You, this stinky brat, do you know how long you slept for?" Teacher Lin asked me with a smile, seeing that I was able to remain unscathed, Teacher Lin was feeling extremely cheerful.

"I slept for how long? Teacher Lin." I asked.

"It's already a bit past seven. Quickly get up, breakfast is already prepared. If you don't get up, you're going to be late." Teacher Lin said.

"Grandpa?" I asked.

"Grandpa went out early in the morning. Seems like there was some mishap in the village." Teacher Lin said.

I tensed up, "What happened?"

"I saw Grandpa leaving very quickly, your Eldest Grandpa had come over to call him, they spoke very quickly, I couldn't hear clearly, and don't know what exactly the matter is." Teacher Lin shook her head, although she had already been at the Ba Jiao village for quite some time, she still found it difficult to understand the Ba Jiao village dialect. If the speed is even marginally quick, then it goes beyond her limits.

I knew that definitely it wouldn't be a good thing.

While returning home when school got over, I heard from the village trumpet. Someone in the village had died!

Amongst the three households, in the entire family only an elder had died. The children seemed to have no apparent issues, however the other two elders' situation also didn't feel right.

"Early in the morning, they didn't wake up even after being shouted at to wake up, believing them to be dead sleep, someone pushed them with a hand only to discover that their bodies were stiff. Only then was it discovered that they had died." Grandpa, while talking about the three elders who had died in the village, was sobbing incessantly.

"As expected something bad had indeed happened." I muttered to myself.

In one village, all of a sudden, three people died. Naturally, this wouldn't be a trivial matter.

Huang Lisheng was worried that sooner or later, he would have to bear the responsibility. After all, the matter of villagers going to the mountains to pick up historical relics would sooner or later be exposed. Even more troublesome was that people had died, the dead were three, when even two was also very dangerous. When going to town, what happened in the village would have to be reported.

[TLNote: Author hops between comatose and dead state pretty frequently]

At this time, those three families all let me examine them, I also couldn't evade. I could only have a look. Although the two elders still hadn't died, the situation was very bad. Their bodies were wrapped thoroughly with black qi. Their eyes were shut tightly, and were not responding to shouts.

I patted a strand of primordial qi into Grandma, but it seemed as if it fell into a murky sea. The black qi on elder's body moved slightly, but there was no change in elder's situation at all. I patted more than a dozen strands of primordial qi continuously. If it were yesterday, it would have been enough to solve the problems of more than a dozen people, but today, the situation of this old woman was not seeing even a trace of improvement.

[TLNote: Ok so this is not really MC's Grandma, it is just a term used out of respect for the Old lady. Also, yes, the Author did change the terms of reference many times during the para, confusing the shit out of me, but anyways, I hope you get the point]

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 24

## Chapter 24 Sealed Off

This move of mine, no matter how many time I use this move, I am finding myself at wits' end.

“Yang Yang, what is the situation?” Eldest Grandpa asked with great concern.

“It’s useless. I don’t know why it isn’t working!” I was a child, and when a serious responsibility pressed down on me, I would not be able to withstand it somewhat.

“Why is it that you don’t know what to do? Last night didn’t you saved a lot of people? Can’t you just use the same method you used yesterday?” Eldest Grandpa said somewhat anxiously.

The villagers were also looking at me.

“I did follow yesterday’s method, but it is of no use. I just got lucky yesterday, but I can’t seem to do anything right today, how should I know what to do?!” I was angry, and straightaway quit the task, opened a path in the crowd and walked out.

“Ai! What should we do about this!” Eldest Grandpa and the village elders all sank into a dejected state.

Wu wu wu, the siren at the village intersection suddenly began blaring out. The siren managed to attract everyone’s attention. I was on the way back to home, and when I looked up to see a lot of police cars on the road, and behind it were many green military vehicles. It was packed to the full with soldiers in uniform.

“Did something happen? Are they coming to catch some bad person?” I was surprised, while I asked secretly in my heart.

Only later did I come to know, that the county was the under the impression that an epidemic had broken out here. A large number of poultry and livestock had died, now it had further gone on to spread to people. Anyone who would hear this would immediately think of one word: Epidemic situation. [TLNote: Well the Raws say about two characters, but that’s just how Epidemic/epidemic situation is written in Chinese]

Sure enough, several ambulances also followed in the back.

The convoy stopped at the village entrance. The soldiers quickly jumped down from the cars, and began drawing a defensive perimeter encircling the village. People wearing chemical-resistant suits began entering the village.

The village branch secretary also hadn’t thought that one phone call of his could lead to such big fuss. He walked over to the village entrance panickedly.



“Who are you?” Huang Lisheng was quickly stopped by a person.

“I am the Ba Jiao village branch secretary, it was I who made the phone call to report the situation here. We don’t have an epidemic situation here. So you all don’t need to panic so much.” Huang Lisheng was somewhat regretting making that phone call.

“Whether there is or isn’t, is not for you to decide, we also don’t have the final say in that. We have to carry out tests, to determine whether there is or isn’t. You will be informed when the test results come out, Ok.” The chemical-resistant suit wearing person quickly introduced himself, “I am the County disease controlling chief Tan Yinglian. You go back and inform the people of your village that we suspect that Ba Jiao village has a severe epidemic situation. The country in this situation has decided to temporarily quarantine off Ba Jiao village. No one can enter and no one can leave. Only after the possibility of an epidemic situation is excluded or eliminated, will the blockade be lifted.

I watched from afar for a long time, but still couldn’t understand what was going on. So, I quickly started walking towards home. Actually I was very much worried that these people had come because of the events that occurred last night. Had they come to catch me? That thought, was making me somewhat nervous.

Teacher Lin was also standing in the courtyard surveying the situation outside.

“Teacher Lin, those people are saying that we have an epidemic situation here. Now the People’s Liberation Army has surrounded the village, Teacher Lin what is this epidemic situation?” I walked over and pulled at Teacher Lin’s clothes.

“Epidemic situation means when within a village there is an outbreak of an infectious disease. In the village, so many livestock and poultry died suddenly, and furthermore several people died, so it is normal for them to have this suspicion.” Teacher Lin was also somewhat worried.

“But, the village’s poultry and livestock didn’t die because of an infectious disease, ah!” I said.

“They will investigate thoroughly.” Teacher Lin patted my head.

Grandpa came walking hurriedly: “Yang Yang, some people have come to the village, you must not run around everywhere wildly.”

The staff members of the epidemic prevention branch started going door to door to draw blood for analyses. They first wanted to confirm whether or not the village really had an epidemic situation.

When the epidemic prevention branch set to work to prepare to battle the disease, the situation of the people of those two households had become very serious, and they were dying. The doctors weren’t able to play any role to alleviate the effects suffered by those two critically ill patients.

The three people that had died earlier in the village still hadn’t been buried, yet now two more were dead. In a small village, five people died suddenly. If someone were to say it was a natural death, who would believe it?

I didn’t know whether my act of saving some village lives earlier had or hadn’t been told

by the village branch secretary to the aforementioned doctors. I was a little worried, that because of this matter I would get arrested. Seeing those fully-armed police and soldiers, my heart was trembling.

Teacher Lin could finally see that I was not well, “Huang Jingyang, what happened to you? Are you feeling unwell?”

In a village, all of a sudden so many people died, and suddenly seeing someone abnormal, there would always be some no-good connections.

“I, Teacher Lin, will they come arrest me?” I asked anxiously.

“Arrest you? Why would they arrest you? You haven’t done anything bad.” Teacher Lin seeing that there wasn’t anything wrong with me, exposed a smile on her face.

“Last night’s thing.” I was still very worried.

Teacher Lin frowned: “It will be all right. That cannot be considered a misdemeanour of yours. Don’t be afraid. They have come over to save people, not to arrest people.”

At that time I wasn’t aware, that after the blood from the villagers was drawn and the results from the lab tests had come out, the Doctors in the county were very shocked to find that they weren’t able to detect any known virus in the villagers’ bodies. The samples from the several dead people also yielded similar results.

However, Ba Jiao village’s blockade was still not touched. The poultry and livestock buried by the villagers were also dug out by the doctors of the Center for Disease Control and Prevention, and after running a variety of tests, they were still unable to achieve anything.

Ba Jiao village was filled with a tense atmosphere. The phone in the village branch secretary’s home became the only medium for Ba Jiao village and the outside world to communicate. The people in the village would communicate the village’s situation to outside through the telephone, telling the people who were preparing to come back, to temporarily not come back.

Grandpa and I didn’t make any phone calls, because we knew that my parents were unlikely to come back anyways.

The adults were all very nervous, but as far as us children were concerned, it was one of those hard to come by times of no-control.

I wasn’t sure if it was because of that night’s matter, but I was no longer seen by the village children as ‘forbidden area’.

Huang Shulang was especially intent on running to my home. Huang Shulang wasn’t spending these past few days happily.

“Haven’t had meat to eat for several days.” Huang Shulang spoke of his heart’s anguish.

All the pigs in the village except for those in my house had all died. Naturally nobody would ask Huang Shulang’s father to butcher pigs. Obviously, Huang Shulang wouldn’t have any meat to eat.

“Can’t see it.” I looked at the fat on Huang Shulang’s body and said laughing.

Huang Shulang shook his greasy belly: "See, how my belly has become so small. Not capable of going without meat to eat. These days are hard to pass."

I didn't respond to Huang Shulang. I didn't have any good impression regarding these village brats.

"Huang Jingyang, how did those Ba Grannies die?" Huang Shulang asked further.

[TLNote: Another confusing sentence, My best guess is that since village name is Ba Jiao, thus, Grannies of Ba Jiao Village -> Ba Grannies]

"How would I know?" Everyday, I had endless things to do. Where would I have spare time to talk nonsense with classmate Huang Shulang.

"That night you went to the primary school to save people, I know that affair pretty well. My dad had also gone that day. Those three elders from those three families didn't go, as a result they lost their lives. You definitely know what is going on."

I rolled my eyes, and thought: You damned fatty, since when did you start speaking so logically?

"Huang Lisheng had called a meeting on that day, it had no relation to me." I said.

"You must know something!" Damned fatty Huang Shulang shouted out loudly.

"I am busy, don't bother me." This is the thing which I was most worried about. If this fatty comes to know, then with his open mouth, it would sooner or later spread to the entire lookout. Then the doctors which had come from the county would come to know. Perhaps they'd come for my head.

The village had been sealed off for one week, even experts from the province had come, but the cause of the death of livestock and people in Ba Jiao village couldn't be discovered.

I heard Huang Shulang say that these experts had held a lot of meetings. The meetings also went very poorly. Some experts argued since it had been confirmed that there has not been an occurrence of any epidemic situation known to science, and moreover as there haven't been any new infections in the Ba Jiao village, this indicates that the matter of death of people and livestock was possibly somewhat coincidental. It already didn't make much sense for Ba Jiao village to continue to remain sealed off. It should be unsealed as soon as possible. While some experts believed, that if the blockade is lifted rashly, then once the epidemic spreads, the inevitable impact would be extremely serious. The expert holders of these two different viewpoints were awfully busy quarrelling with each other.

"Honk Honk"

The sound of an automobile's horn sounded out at the village entrance. I very quickly rushed out, and saw that a few black cars had come to village.

The fatty also shouted at me loudly from their house's courtyard: "Huang Jingyang, Huang Jingyang! Look, more people have come again."

There is much difference between the people this time and the previous time, because I could see that the people that came out when the car stopped, were not wearing chemical-resistant suits. These people were wearing jackets, some were also wearing western-style

clothes. They looked very classy. Only later did I come to know that these people were from the province's cultural relic bureau. They had some very specialized people in their midst.

Regarding these specialized people, actually from the moment that they had arrived, I had already had a confrontation with one of them.

The last of the people to get down from the car, there was unexpectedly a person who was wearing a chang pao. I could see it from a glance that this person was very special, but where exactly his speciality lay, I couldn't tell.

When I stared at the person, he also unexpectedly turned to look at me. I didn't know if it was coincidental or intentional. He was seemingly capable of feeling my presence.

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 25

## Chapter 25 Archaeology Team

I jumped in fright, I could clearly feel his gaze on me.

I hurriedly withdrew my gaze, that person was seemingly very surprised and glanced at me, then recovered his gaze.

This person is very special, I could feel that the aura upon his body was similar to that on mine.

As soon as these people arrived, the CDC people seemed to have suddenly arrived at a consensus. The blockade was very quickly broken. Most of the army and police had been withdrawn, and the doctors of the CDC were also evacuated. However, that delegation from the cultural relics bureau stayed in the village. Moreover, there were still some armed forces and police left behind.

“Huang Jingyang, Huang Jingyang.” Just after lunch, I heard Huang Shulang shouting outside.

“What is it?” I went out.

“Those people have gone to Ba Jiao Mountain, must be to excavate treasures, you haven’t gone to take a look? A lot of people in our village have gone.” I didn’t know why Huang Shulang told me this news, but I was indeed very interested in this news.

I put two baskets atop Old Yellow, and then striking it on the back, walked out with a small basket in my hands.

“Huang Jingyang, where are you going?” Teacher Lin asked as she chased out after me.

“I am going to the mountains to collect firewood. The firewood in the house is being burnt away very quickly.” I was not making up excuses. There was indeed a deficiency of firewood in the house. Our firewood stove is not an economical stove. To prepare one meal, a lot of firewood had to be burnt. So we must often go like this to the mountains to collect firewood.

“I’ll go with you.” Teacher Lin thought that walking into the mountains was a very interesting thing.

“The mountain interiors are very difficult to walk, it would be better if you did not go.” This time, I wanted to watch on with the crowd, it would naturally be a bit inconvenient with Teacher Lin.

“I haven’t been to the mountain interiors yet. You need to take me along.” I really couldn’t refuse Teacher Lin’s request.

Black Bean also ended up following behind. At this time, there was a situation of winds calling and cranes sighing in the village. Even Black Bean and Old Yellow remained quiet. Obviously they could feel the uneasy atmosphere in the village. [TLNote: Idiom: “Winds calling and cranes sighing”, Meaning “Feeling jumpy/Jittery/Panicky”]

Huang Shulang’s house burnt coal, so he didn’t need to go to the mountains to pick up firewood like me. Seeing Teacher Lin following behind me, Huang Shulang found it somewhat hard to believe what he was seeing.

“Teacher Lin is also going?” Huang Shulang frowned.

“Why? Do you have any problem with Teacher Lin going?” Teacher Lin said smilingly. Obviously she knew that we were using the picking up firewood as an excuse, or perhaps she had already heard my conversation with Huang Shulang earlier.

“I don’t, I don’t. Here in the mountain interiors, the trees are lush and the road is not so easy.” Having only arrived at the foot of the Ba Jiao mountain, one could already see, Ba Jiao Village’s Huang Clan’s graves. Several new graves had wreaths suspended on them, and when looking for afar, it looked very conspicuous.

“Huang Shulang, look there’s someone behind you!” Seeing Huang Shulang’s nervous look, I rolled my eyes, and shouted out suddenly.

Huang Shulang feet immediately went weak, as he slumped down on to the ground: “What is behind me?”

Huang Shulang barely stopped before crying. However, very quickly understood that I was just toying with him, so very discontentedly said: “Don’t try to scare people in the mountains, dead people are sca-scary you know?” [TLNote: Imagine him stuttering and repeating sentences]

“You are so cowardly, and yet dare to go to Ba Jiao Mountain? Just in case you see something, don’t go pissing your pants.” I laughed.

Teacher Lin pursed her lips, but her face was full of smiles.

After I said so much, Huang Shulang couldn’t remain unconcerned, moreover, since Teacher Lin was also here, Huang Shulang wasn’t willing to even think of losing to me: “Who is afraid. I just wasn’t ready a moment ago. You come again, I definitely won’t be afraid.”

“Eight Grannies, you need not come out in the daytime to scare people. Huang Shulang won’t be afraid of you.

Huang Shulang didn’t believe me, but still his whole body was trembling: “Huang Jingyang, I know that you are lying. I am not afraid!”

“You are not afraid, then why are you shaking?” I said laughing.

“Huang Jingyang, don’t scare people.” Teacher Lin’s voice also trembled somewhat.

I scratched my head, and honestly took the lead as we walked into the mountain. Huang Shulang being the cowardliest, didn’t dare walk in the front, but was also afraid to stay in the back, I could only walk in the front, with Teacher Lin following behind me, Huang Shulang walking behind her, and finally in the last was my family’s Old Yellow. Black

Bean wasn't as simple as Old Yellow. Just now he was walking in the front, and suddenly, he ran into a dense thicket to chase after some sparrows. From time to time, common sparrows would fly out of the thickets after being chased out by Black Bean.

"Huang Jingyang, can you make your dog not jump around in the thickets?" Huang Shulang was frightened several times, and had somewhat begun imagining every tree or bush as a threat.

"I have no control over this." I said laughing.

While I was walking, I was also picking up things in the mountains, like dried up branches and pinecones. After all, at least in name I had come over to collect firewood. Even Black Bean would also, from time to time, come over with a pine cone in his mouth and put it in the bamboo basket.

Huang Shulang, who had originally wanted to sit on the ground and pause to take a breath, upon seeing Teacher Lin also searching everywhere for firewood, was also forced to stand up, left with no choice but to look everywhere for it.

"Nowadays, it is only your house in the village which is still burning firewood for fuel. Burning firewood is not clean, as it also makes ash and smoke. You should see my house, we burn coal for power, and our house remains much cleaner." Huang Shulang was very much criticizing my house's firewood burning.

"Huang Shulang, did you forget that your entire family had once almost died of coal gas poisoning, eh?" I asked. Huang Shulang's family, in one winter, had the windows of their house sealed shut tightly. The entire family was poisoned by the coal fumes. Fortunately, the village people discovered it, and by breaking open the windows, had the people escorted to the hospital. The entire family was on the verge of being wiped out. Fortunately, it was daytime, if it had been night, then I am afraid we would only have found corpses.

Huang Shulang wasn't too happy with me bringing up old issues, but he also couldn't find the words to refute what I had said.

Now in the village, very few people were burning firewood, so the amount of firewood in the mountains was bountiful. In a short amount of time and through only casual labour, we had already filled up all the baskets we had brought.

"Huang Jingyang, now we should return right? It's already been half-day of helping you pick up firewood." Huang Shulang impatiently said.

Teacher Lin asked immediately: "You still need to go somewhere?"

"Teacher Lin, the archaeology team that has come to our village, is studying relics over there. Let's go over and take a look." Huang Shulang said while pointing at the highest peak on Ba Jiao mountain.

It was on the highest mountain peak of Ba Jiao mountain that I had picked up the Bronze Medal. The villagers had also brought home treasured objects from that place..

"Huang Shulang, did your family return the treasured object that you had brought back?" I was somewhat skeptical of whether the people in the village had returned the things that

they had picked up from the Ba Jiao Mountain or not, and even if they had returned them, they might also have played some sort of a trick.

“I returned it, I definitely did. If we hadn’t returned it, then how come not even a single issue has arisen in our family?” Huang Shulang said promptly.

I could naturally tell that Huang Shulang wasn’t telling the truth, because I could see somewhat dodgy expression in his eyes.

“You are lying. Your father must have definitely hid those objects somewhere. Must be preparing for digging them back again at some time. I urge you, it would in your best interests to dissuade your father from having any thoughts on those things, otherwise you will definitely suffer a mishap.” I knew that Huang Shulang’s family wouldn’t believe me, but now that I had warned them, if they still did not listen, then it would at least be their business. Later, I will also not go take care of their family.

Teacher Lin was a city person, she had never walked on a road like that Ba Jiao Mountain road. In fact, this so called mountain road, was fundamentally not a road, rather it was a pathway cut by the people who went to the mountains to chop out firewood. With thorns and thistles at every step, requiring quite a bit of experience to avoid hardship. Teacher Lin couldn’t walk even a single step, I could only walk with her following behind. Huang Shulang came across some other children of the village, and they abandoned me and Teacher Lin, to quickly run towards Ba Jiao mountain’s tallest peak.

“What are all you children doing here?” I could hear a voice of an adult coming from a distance. Presumably, it must be directed towards Huang Shulang and his group.

“We, we came to the mountain to p-pick up firewood.” The one who spoke was Ma Jindong.

Huang Shulang immediately spoke with boldness and conviction: “Right! We have come here to gather firewood. This mountain is our Ba Jiao Village’s mountain. Why can you all come, but we can’t come?”

“Hey! Fatty, what’s your name? What school are you from? Looks like I’ll have to go have a good talk with your teachers. We are the province’s Cultural Heritage Bureau Archaeology team. We are here to conduct archaeological activities, you are here to steal historical relics? That is a crime punishable by long jail term.” That adult said with a smile.

Huang Shulang immediately panicked: “We, we are here to pick up firewood, and not to dig or steal historical relics.”

“At present this area has already been sealed off by us of the Cultural Heritage Bureau, and no one is allowed to come here. All you children go back quickly. It is not safe here. Liu Jinan, get something to eat for these children, and quickly dispatch them off the mountain.” That man who had spoken in the very beginning, said in a commanding tone.

Huang Shulang said pleased with himself: “You all see, how fierce I am. I opened my mouth, and they could only comply and give us things to eat.”

That young man named Liu Jinan of the archaeological team, ran into the tent quickly, brought out a bag of snacks, and put them into Huang Shulang’s grubby hands: “These are



for you all to eat. Eat and then quickly leave. This place is not some place that you should come.”

Huang Shulang grabbed onto it and said: “This is what I obtained, I should eat a bit more.”

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 26

## Chapter 26 Mountain Summit

By the time I brought Teacher Lin to come over, Huang Shulang and group were still eating. When it came to eating things, Huang Shulang can square off against two or three people at the same time. Originally, the things were supposed to be evenly distributed. Huang Shulang ate up two-three portions by himself clean, only later could the impatiently waiting Ma Jindong and others get to eat.

“Ma Jindong, isn’t this pastry tasty?” Huang Shulang asked with a smile, with fire coming out of his eyes.

“Tasty, but th-this, is mine.” Although Ma Jindong stuttered, he could express himself quite accurately.

Ma Jindong also looked at Li Lijuan: “Juan’zi, tasty or not?”

[TLNote: Zi is a suffix to the name Juan]

“Tasty.” But others including Li Lijuan had been on guard against everything and anything and Huang Shulang from the very start, didn’t give any chance to Huang Shulang.

Huang Shulang saw that there was almost zero possibility of his little friends stretching out their hands, but he also couldn’t rely on brute force to forcibly take away, because his fighting ability was even lesser than Li Lijuan’s. As a result, Huang Shulang could only helplessly walk back towards the mountain summit.

“Hey you, the fatty, just now we told you all that this place is not where you all can come. Why have you come again.” As Huang Shulang walked up, he was immediately recognized by the people guarding the entrance. It wasn’t really that difficult to not recognize, Huang Shulang’s features were too distinctive.

“Uncle, are there some more of those tasty treats?” Huang Shulang asked timidly.

“You little, you have gained all that fat just like this, and still you are thinking of eating. Those were for us to eat on our way down, everything has been given to you all. You hurry up and go back. This mountain is not safe.” Said the man who was guarding the entrance.

Huang Shulang could only bitterly leave, but he had only walked a few steps, before he turned back: “Uncle, what are you guys doing here? This here is our Huang Clan’s ancestral graves. Could it be that you have come here to dig up our Huang Clan’s ancestral graves?”

“Nonsense, we are here for archaeology.” That person panicked somewhat. This really was some clan’s ancestral graves, and even though they were relying on the banner of

archaeology, it still cannot be said to be justified somewhat. You cannot do archaeology on some clan's ancestral graves. Generally archaeological excavations are all conducted in ownerless tombs. Whereas these tombs have clear-cut descendants who won't allow archaeology team to come do archaeology.

"Whether or not you are digging graves, I will go back and tell the villagers." Huang Shulang turned back to walk.

That man panicked, and quickly caught up: "Fatty, don't go so fast, I still have some snacks, all of which I can give to you to eat. You little fatty, you really are wicked."

I could hear from the distance the conversation between Huang Shulang and that man, and thought to myself that Huang Shulang, in order to eat his fill, can really come up with any sort of wicked ideas. Usually really used to underestimate him due to the hundred or so jin fat on his body.

Actually, the tomb on this Ba Jiao Mountain's main peak cannot really be considered to be the Huang Clan's ancestral tomb. The graves of the village's varied surnamed families were all located at the foothill of the mountain. Who would dare to put the graves on this mountain's summit? I had once heard that this Ba Jiao Mountain's main peak has a grand mausoleum, belonging to a very powerful figure. This so-called powerful person definitely didn't have that fame during his lifetime, rather, he had become very fierce immediately before his death. I heard it was a very powerful Yin-Yang, and even while living, he had turned this Ba Jiao Mountain's main peak into his grave-site. After he died, he was buried on this peak.

As far as the people of Ba Jiao Village were concerned, the Ba Jiao Mountain's main peak was considered a forbidden ground from the very beginning, and after frequent warnings from parents, one would absolutely not enter the Ba Jiao Mountain's main peak. In the village, there would often be people who spoke of seeing the silhouette of a person on the main peak. There was even a time when sounds of fierce fighting were heard from that place. However, I had never ever seen it, and also I wasn't sure if the adults were just saying that to scare us.

I remember that one time that I had gone there by mistake, it was also because I was chasing after a hare. The result was me carelessly entering the main peak, where I had picked up the Bronze Medal, which has, to this date, hung around my neck. However, I had never ever thought that such a small bronze medal, would be capable of completely altering the trajectory of my life. But still, I would rather have not discovered this bronze medal, since if I hadn't, I would, like other children, have been a recipient of the meticulous care of my parents.

[TLNote: Well this is a first, an MC regretting his fortuitous event]

Huang Shulang's scheme had succeeded, and he came out holding a big pile of snacks. As he saw me coming up along with Teacher Lin, he promptly took that big pouch full of things and hid it in his clothes, making the clothes which were originally already stretched to the limit, be on the point of rupturing.

"Huang Jingyang, quickly go back. Those of the archaeology team won't let you in." Huang Shulang was worried that I would use the same method to go ask the archaeology team for snacks. If that were so, he wouldn't be able to monopolize that Dugu Qiubai kind

of a feeling. A child's thoughts are always somewhat unique.

[TLNote: Ok that Dugu Qiubai part is messy. I have no idea what is going on there, except that Dugu Qiubai is apparently a character from Jin Yong's Wuxia novels and is unusually powerful ]

"Your conversation with them was so loud, that I could hear it from the foothills of the mountain, isn't that right, Teacher Lin." I said laughing as I turned my body to face Teacher Lin.

"And What did you hear exactly? I haven't said any nonsense." Huang Shulang wasn't so sure in his heart, he had a very guilty conscience, his eyes were shifting incessantly even though his eyes were small. In fact, it was fundamentally difficult to even see his eyes, but from seeing that one strip changing entirely white or going black, one could possibly be capable of distinguishing.

"Really didn't talk nonsense. Then you tell which of your ancestors has been buried on this mountain?" I said laughing. Teacher Lin upon hearing also giggled.

"I also didn't say which ancestor of our clan has been buried here. Anyway, the person buried here was our Ba Jiao Village's person, you say, right or wrong? He is our Ba Jiao Village's person, then that is our ancestor. They came to dig our ancestor's tomb, that is not right. You say, right or wrong?" Huang Shulang kept constantly stirring his two fat lips.

Teacher Lin laughingly said: "Huang Shulang, if you were to use that intelligence of yours towards studies, and ensure that you don't maintain your present appearance, then it wouldn't be difficult for you to get accepted into a university."

"Of course, I am our Ba Jiao Village's number one in intelligence. Now finally Teacher Lin realized it." Huang Shulang smiled at me with a look of pride.

I ignored the fatty, and walked past his side, moving towards the mountain top.

"Why did you come again?" The guard at the entrance was a 27-28 year old man. Hearing the sound of footsteps, he had thought that fatty had returned again, and after coming out upon seeing me, said scowling miserably: "All of you kids, have all of your forms of entertainment died? Everything has already been swindled by that fatty. You go talk to that fatty. In any case, I won't permit whoever comes to go past."

I laughed 'Heheh': "This place is our Ba Jiao village's territory, for what reason can you not let us people of the Ba Jiao village to go the mountain top?"

"Our archaeology team is conducting archaeology. Nobody is permitted to enter this place." This person had been incensed by me.

"You say that you all are the archaeology team? What proof do you have to say that you are the archaeology team". I also didn't shrink back. I had seen on T.V, that doing any sort of work required all sorts of paper-work.

That man looked at me somewhat surprised, "How come all you village children are so troublesome? If I were not a part of the archaeology team, would I still have dared to come here?"

“Before you people came here, some grave-robbers had come. Later, they were all driven away by the villagers with sticks and shoulder-poles.” I stared intently at that man.

That man laughed, “Ok, ok, ok, I will go and get the documents.”

Teacher Lin walked over: “Huang Jingyang, we’d better go down. When they came here, it seems as if they went to your village first. It must definitely be the archaeology team. How could a team of grave robbers dare to act so brazenly.”

“Precisely. If we were tomb raiders, would we still come here with so much fanfare? Even now this place had your county’s police providing assistance. They only just now left.” That man’s eyes immediately brightened upon seeing Teacher Lin, “This beautiful lady, we really are the archaeology team, my name is Liu Jinan. We are part of Professor Qian Senrong and Professor Cai Shengquan’s team. We are students of Professor Qian Senrong. How could we possibly be grave robbers?”

“Children are just curious. I am their teacher. Really sorry for trouble they caused you.” Teacher Lin after saying that, pulled me to one side, “These people are not impostors. We should go ahead and return. It’s not good to disturb their work.”

“Would it be possible for us to have a look at the place where you are excavating?” I said, still somewhat not reconciled.

The main reason was that I was still wearing that bronze medal around my neck, and I had many thoughts as far as this old tomb was concerned. Since, this bronze medal had come from here. Perhaps, there may be even more objects similar to the bronze medal at this place.

“Also cannot, must not. I may take you both to the archaeology site to have a look, but you must compulsorily follow my instructions, and after taking a look, you must depart at once.” Liu Jinan was naturally looking at Teacher Lin, willing to make concession.

“In that case, thank you very much.” Teacher Lin thanked him promptly.

“No problem, No problem. In fact, last time when we did archaeology, there were also several people who had come to visit. Making the common man understand somewhat the task of archaeology is also important for the protection of the historical relics.” Liu Jinan was naturally willing to beat his own trumpet.

“This mountain is very steep, I honestly don’t know what the advantage would be of going through so much effort to have the graveyard placed atop such an inaccessible fortress-like mountain.” I could see Liu Jinan’s trying to act as safeguard, while climbing the mountain, he never tried to catch me, but rather from time to time would try to grab Teacher Lin. However, every time I would be able to act ahead of him, not letting him get the opportunity. Each time, he would look at me with a frown.

Teacher Lin seeing such obvious actions of mine, couldn’t help but chuckle incessantly.

In any case, I was a child, also didn’t speak about face or care about any face.

Liu Jinan being blocked by me so many times, naturally felt it embarrassing to squabble with a child.

Anyways, it took almost half an hour before we were able to arrive at the site. The main

reason was because the mountain road was difficult. Teacher Lin's hair was quite long, several times it had become entangled in vines and thorns, taking up the majority of time and effort, just to undo it. Later, Teacher Lin would treat her hair properly.

"Liu Jinan, you are no good at guarding the mountain, what are you doing running up to here?" As Liu Jinan was walking towards the summit, some person quickly said disgruntledly.

"Don't talk about it, this village has lots of children who came running over to watch the scene. I am only one person, can't cope with them without end. This person is their teacher, I brought one of her students along to have a look, so as to not let the villagers think that we have come here as grave robbers." Liu Jinan quickly said.

"Liu Jinan, this is foolishly creating trouble, just wait until Teacher Qian arrives, he will definitely give you a piece of his mind." That person again said.

"Wu Lei, you need not wave a chicken feather as a token of authority. What I should or shouldn't do, that thing will be decided by Teacher Qian, and Teacher Cai will have the final say. What are you doing standing there and finding faults with others?" Liu Jinan said annoyedly.

[TLNote: Idiom: To wave a chicken feather as a token of authority; Meaning: To assume unwarranted authority on the basis of some pretext]

Wu Lei was originally about to say something, but after seeing Teacher Lin, he didn't speak.

"Are we disturbing your work?" Teacher Lin asked somewhat anxiously.

"No issue, No Issue, we are just joking." Wu Lei promptly changed his mind.

Liu Jinan unhappily stared coldly at Wu Lei, he definitely didn't believe that he was just joking a moment ago.

I was completely fascinated by the imposing manner of this mountain top. This place was really unusual. At this place, I could already feel that trace of imposing manner making me tremble. That trace of imposing manner was seemingly stimulating the primordial qi within my body.

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 27

## Chapter 27 – Old Tomb

Liu Jinan and that Wu Lei were confronting each other, which was just enough to allow me to look around freely.

The people on the mountain summit were all very busy. A lot of the places had already been tagged with labels, although I also didn't know what they would be used for. There were some people who were pulling on the measurement tape on the mountain summit, looking very professional compared to the village carpenter making wooden articles, the workmanship was even more accurate and exquisite.

At this time, that very distinct looking person who I had seen that time at the village entrance, came walking from one side of the mountain summit. While on one hand he walked, on the other hand he conversed with two jacket-wearing middle-aged men. Even though the distance was quite far, I could vaguely make out the essence of what they were talking about.

That mysterious person said: "This grave has been around for some years. I also cannot make it out accurately. Ordinarily, villagers would come pick up and take away those wares, but they don't look like they came out of this grave. This grave has seemingly been preserved quite well, absolutely doesn't have any signs of grave robbing. How would it be possible for the things in the cemetery to run out on their own? In case if someone did do grave robbing, it would have been impossible for those things to be left behind. In addition, there is another issue. Those things have dense death qi on them. From where did it come?"

"Li Shaoqing, tell me, could it be that this death qi has caused the sudden death of the five people in Ba Jiao village?" From the two jacket-wearing people, a middle-aged man said.

"En. This is exactly the case. The livestock and the living persons were infected, and nobody who hasn't cultivated can resolve it, as it would lead to certain death. However, I heard that a lot of people from the Ba Jiao village had picked up relics, then how is it possible that only five people died. These five people were concentrated only in three families." That person named Li Shaoqing frowned.

"We can go discuss this again some other time, first let's talk about the matter of this great tomb. The specific era to which this great tomb belonged to is unable to be determined from what has appeared in the excavation. I feel that this great tomb is marvellous. Fortunately, you asked me to come, otherwise you could have caused a major event." Li Shaoqing said with a laugh.

"What is it?" The other middle-aged man had a look of amazement.

“Hey, hey. Yi, a guest has arrived.” Li Shaoqing was originally preparing to say something, when he seemingly became aware of something, as he looked towards the position where I was standing. My gaze had also stayed on his body momentarily, unexpectedly, he was able to detect it.

I was shocked, to see from a distance Li Shaoqing smiling at me.

Li Shaoqing and those two middle-aged men hurriedly walked over to where I was.

“You both need to hurry up and leave. If I let Teacher Qian and Teacher Cai see you, then I’ll be in trouble.” Liu Jinan was somewhat regretting bringing these two people to the top. He had originally thought that Qian Senrong and Cai Shengquan were making the rounds in the mountains for a while, who could have imagined that they would so quickly manage to come over.

However, it was too late for me and Teacher Lin to leave even immediately, because I knew that Li Shaoqing has already seen me and also, I knew that Li Shaoqing and I were the same type of people. He had on his body the same kind of an aura. Originally, I believed that I was a somewhat unique and unmatched existence in this world, however, I didn’t expect that so soon I would meet people who are similar to me.

“What is going on? Liu Jinan, didn’t we let you guard the mountain pass, and to not allow people to come over? We have over here such precious equipment, if they were lost, who would be responsible? Archaeology at this place is a very serious matter, not for scenic sightseeing.” The faces of the two jacket wearing middle-aged men were not looking good, as one amongst them shouted at Liu Jinan angrily.

Liu Jinan was feeling extremely regretful, but also didn’t dare reply, as he hastily said to Teacher Lin: “You both had better go down.”

But Li Shaoqing said with a laugh: “These so called youths, ah. You all should not underestimate this little handsome fellow. He is not so simple.”

Having said that Li Shaoqing walked over to me, I had already condensed a strand of primordial qi within my palm, ready to at any time to stimulate the offensive type seal script.

“Little child, how come the wariness within your heart is so strong? Don’t jump to conclusions, I will be standing here, I just wanted to ask you about some things.” Li Shaoqing stopped not far from me. He seemed to be able to detect that I was making precautions against him, also felt that I could at any time be able to launch an attack.

“What do you want to know?” I was extremely cautious against this person who might possibly be similar to me, and subconsciously able to feel that he should be more dangerous than any other person.

“Was it because of you that not many people in the village had died?” Li Shaoqing asked.

I shook my head : “I too don’t know.”

“Phrasing it differently, what thing did you actually do.” Li Shaoqing asked.

“I also don’t know. Anyways, anyways.....Why do you ask?” I suddenly came to my senses, why should I tell him?



“Unexpectedly, you were able to succeed in establishing your Foundation at such a young age, you are not simple, ah.” Li Shaoqing said.

“What does it matter to you?” Until I am able to determine whether Li Shaoqing is a good or a bad person, I won’t tell him anything about my state of affairs.

“Heh heh. Little kid, you really are interesting. Did you join a Sect?” Li Shaoqing asked.

Can I really tell him that I am only self-taught? Therefore, I only let out a snort.

Li Shaoqing knew that I was at the moment full of caution towards him, so could only change the subject.

“Why was it that only those few people had died?” Li Shaoqing asked.

“How would I know? They didn’t go to the village primary on that day and even more they risked their life in pursuit of money.” In my eagerness to avoid responsibility, the entire background was all of a sudden spoken out by me. Ah, the suffering from the inexperience of youth.

“So it was really you who took action. Also, it is good that you took action, otherwise your entire village would have dropped dead.” Li Shaoqing said with a sigh. Who would be capable of believing that such a small child, would be capable of saving the lives of the people within an entire village.

“Teacher Lin, we should descend.” I took Teacher Lin’s hand and began descending the mountain. I discovered that not only do I lose to this mysterious man in terms of cultivation, but even more so to his glib tongue.

Even though Teacher Lin didn’t know what we were talking about, she was still able to conclude from hearing, that I was being passive. Therefore, she also didn’t ask anything and following behind me, began the going down the mountain.

“Hey. Kid. What’s your name? Later, I will come to the village to find you.” Li Shaoqing asked loudly.

“I won’t tell you.” I said angrily.

This mysterious man gave me a feeling of immense crisis.

As I turned around, I heard the other two people ask Li Shaoqing.

“Li Shaoqing, what is exactly the deal with this kid?”

“If I said that this kid’s cultivation isn’t lower than mine, would you believe it?”

“How is it possible?” Those two jacket wearing individuals were naturally very surprised.

Li Shaoqing said laughing: “I know you don’t believe me, but If I had walked just a few steps forward, that fellow would have been able to kill me, do you believe? Since, ancient times heroes have come from youngsters.”

Teacher Lin followed me as we quickly went down the mountain, while all the way she also remained exceptionally curious.

“Huang Jingyang, what was he talking about? What sect? What kind of doctrine?” During the 99s, the Falun Gong already started causing havok across the country, and was soon

banned. Teacher Lin was afraid that I will go down the wrong path.” [TLNote: For more information on Falun Gong [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Falun\\_Gong](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Falun_Gong); Much thanks to HayateButler for help on this one. I would have been lost without help on this para.]

If I were to know what Teacher Lin was thinking, I would have surely felt extremely disdainful. What I cultivate is the Heaven and Earth’s Great Dao, how could I even be put in the same place to be compared with those pickpockets and swindlers.

However, I also couldn’t explain my cultivation or what dao is, as I scratched my head, “Teacher Lin, I’ll tell you after we go back. This person is very difficult to deal with for me. We should first return.”

Teacher Lin upon hearing what I said, grew very nervous, and all the way kept looking back out of fear that the mysterious man would catch up and hurt us.

Fortunately, the entire journey was only terrifying but free of danger, I took Old Yellow and Black Bean and returned home. Oddly enough, when I was going uphill, Black Bean went and hid at an unknown place, and when I was going downhill, only then did Black Bean drill out from that place.

Huang Shulang with exceptional perseverance was waiting at the entrance. By the time we came down, he had nearly finished clean the snacks that he had swindled. Since he didn’t have any water, and the snacks all being somewhat dry, Huang Shulang was choking, while his eyes had turned white, as he hiccuped incessantly.

“Huang Shulang, you are the reincarnation of a hungry ghost.” I couldn’t help but say a sentence.

“Hungry ghost, even if I am a hungry ghost, either ways I am able to eat much better things than you. You don’t even have many good things to eat, if I am throwing up, do you still have the nerve to speak.” Huang Shulang said while throwing hiccups.

Teacher Lin upon seeing Huang Shulang’s appearance, couldn’t help but laugh incessantly: “Huang Shulang, hurry up and descend the mountain to try and find water. Don’t let the choking get worse.”

“No problem, no problem. I’ve just about digested them.” Huang Shulang said disagreeing.

The death of five people in the village, and furthermore death of the livestock and poultry, caused all of a sudden, everything to quiet down. Arriving in the village gave off a somewhat desolate feeling.

“Huang Jingyang, there are no ghosts in the village right? Why is it so gloomy?” Gluttony and cowardice, these few shortcomings could be seen manifesting quite thoroughly on Huang Shulang.

“There is. There is one big fat ghost.” I said unhappily. I sincerely felt that Huang Shulang was a disgrace to the Ba Jiao village.

“Where? Where?” Huang Shulang couldn’t hear clearly, and still believed that there really was a ghost, leading to him promptly going to hide behind us.

Grandpa seeing me coming back after chopping firewood, said immediately: “You mustn’t

go to the mountains for this short while. This child, you even took along Teacher Lin to go to the mountains. The mountain entrance has five new graves, aren't you afraid?"

"If we don't go to the mountains, then what else will our family burn?" I said disagreeing.

"I always thought that this matter isn't over yet. In short, you must listen to me. If worst comes to worst, we will also begin burning coal. This way, you will also have enough time for studying later." Grandpa said.

"That won't do, burning coal involves so many expenses. In the mountains there is firewood aplenty, don't need to spend even a single cent, very cost effective." I didn't want to spend a lot of money on firewood.

At night, when it was time to go to sleep, I didn't feel even the slightest bit of drowsiness. I was remembering the things I had heard at the mountain. I heard them say that the grave on the mountains hadn't been opened, but Ba Jiao village, Ba Jiao villagers had also picked up many things, where did they come from? Earlier, I also had picked up the Bronze Medal from the mountains. Where did it come from? Also, the things that had been returned to the mountains by the villagers, whether or not it fell into the hands of the archaeology team? Why didn't I hear them talk about it?

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 28

## Chapter 28 – The Bronze Medal can Fly

Gradually, Ba Jiao village began to forget the disaster that had struck the village. People always seek life, and time is the best remedy to heal all wounds. The people in the village had become accustomed to the foreigners atop the Ba Jiao Mountain peak. Moreover, they had even begun getting along with them. Since the foreigners also needed to eat and drink, they would always come to the village buy some things to eat. The things which no one could afford to buy in the village, could now be sold to these outsiders. Although the thought that those concealed treasures might be carried away by the outsiders made the people of the village somewhat anxious, when remembering those eight old grannies, there was no resentment left.

The one named Liu Shaoqing would frequently come to my house, but I would always be cautious against him and not speak more than a few words to him every time. The one named Liu Jinan turned out to be a university student from the provincial capital. I disliked him the most, because he would often come to our house to talk to Teacher Lin. Black Bean also hated him. Every time that Liu Jinan came, Black Bean would rush out. And every time, I would scold Black Bean who would have scared Liu Jinan shitless.

“Black Bean, you bastard, every time you fall short of biting others.”

Black Bean, not understanding my words, grumbled loudly, he was already busy attending to the village bitch. [Robin: Female dog, don't misunderstand people ;)]

Teacher Lin could already understand our Ba Jiao Village's dialect. Naturally, she was able to understand what I said to Black Bean.

“You, this muddled brat, if he really bit someone, you would have to pay compensation.”

“Who let him always run to our house, I do not welcome him.” I said pouting.

Teacher Lin said chuckling: “You brat, you're really quite jealous.”

“Do I have vinegar smell coming from my body?” I also couldn't understand what there was to be feeling jealous about. Adults were fond of always beating around the bush. [TLNote: 醋劲 (Cu Jin) = Jealous (In Love); which can be divided into 醋 = Vinegar and 劲 = Strength/Power]

I have been continuously studying seal script, and when the number of seal scripts that I knew already reached over one thousand characters, Teacher Lin said to me.

“Huang Jingyang, you should jump grades. You know characters like a sixth grader, and in mathematics, you are at least equal to a student of fourth or fifth grade. You continuing to stay in first grade is simply a waste of time.”

“I won’t. If I jump grades, then I would no longer be in your class. If I continue in first grade, then I will be in your class.” I was naturally unwilling. I was unable to imagine the situation of there being any other teacher in the class. My feeling of dependence on Teacher Lin had become extremely strong.

“Then if Teacher Lin keeps teaching primary school forever, would you attend primary school your entire life? In the future, you will need to go to junior high school, then after completing junior high school, you will need to go to high school, then you will also need to take the university entrance exam. Teacher Lin cannot accompany you for your entire life, ah.” Teacher Lin tried to mollify me, but it had no effect on me. I felt that Teacher Lin might be thinking of getting rid of me so she could return to the city.

“Teacher Lin, do you want to go?” I looked at Teacher Lin’s eyes, hoping to make out something from her eyes.

“Why would I want to go, ah?” Teacher Lin didn’t understand what I meant.

“You would leave just like that. You are a city person, you cannot always stay with us in our village. Teacher Lin, if you go, what will I do? After I grow up, I will still want to marry Teacher Lin.” I said somewhat anxiously.

“Then even if Teacher Lin goes back, I will still wait for Huang Jingyang to come marry me, ok? But you must read a lot of books and come out from Ba Jiao village. You will need to pass the university entrance exam to come study at the provincial capital.” Teacher Lin looked far off into the distance. I didn’t know what Teacher Lin saw, I also didn’t know what was in that far-off distance. I had earlier climbed to the Ba Jiao Mountain’s main peak, but even in the far distance, I could only see series of rolling mountains. Since that day, I would frequently look into the far-off distance longingly.

[TLNote: Just a fair warning, if this novel were to go the NTR route, I will be dropping this faster than a sack of hot potatoes]

[Robin: Here at Void Translations, we never give up! Even in dry times! Also, what is NTR?][Void: Oh Sweet summer child]

I was able to feel the aura of the highest nine heavens, but I was unable to see far off into the distance.

Nobody taught me insights into the heaven and earth, and nobody told me how to use primordial qi. Of course, Li Shaoqing ought to know, but I will not ask him. He is curious towards me, but not necessarily with good intentions. Even though I was a kid, I understood one of the most simple truths. Meat pies won’t drop from the skies. Moreover, he gives me an extremely dreadful feeling. So, I instinctively resisted contact with him.

The Bronze Medal had been hanging around my neck for a few years, most of the time, I wasn’t even conscious of its presence. Even while bathing, I didn’t remove it. However, the thread that had held up the Bronze Medal all this time, finally broke today from decay.

I was chopping firewood in the mountains, when suddenly the silk thread snapped from thorns in the thistles, and the Bronze Medal suddenly fell down.

However, while the Bronze Medal was airborne, I had a strange feeling. I unexpectedly felt that I was capable of controlling the Bronze Medal to make it fly back into my hands. Just as this thought came, the Bronze Medal suddenly stopped mid-air. Yes, that’s right!

The Bronze Medal had abruptly stopped in mid-air. It seemed as if time had come to a halt. I looked coldly at the Bronze Medal suspended in mid-air.

Just as I relaxed, the Bronze Medal again continued to fall downwards.

“No!” Once again, with a thought, the Bronze Medal unexpectedly obediently flew back into my hands.

I gently stroked the Bronze Medal within my hands. It had already become quite different from how it was when I first picked it up. When I had returned after picking it up, it had a layer of dark brown bronze rust on its surface. However, by now, due to my polishing, it had become golden. Most importantly, it appeared as if it had a hazy shine similar to objects made of gold.

However, now it appeared to have even greater mysteries. Apparently, it was capable of listening to my commands.

I looked at the Bronze Medal in my hands. I opened my hand, and imagined it flying up. A miraculous event once again occurred, the Bronze Medal slowly began flying up from my hand, and flew straight in the direction where I was looking.

“Ah!”

I exclaimed loudly. The Bronze Medal fell down to the ground.

“Come back!”

I shouted loudly, but unfortunately, the Bronze Medal was like my Black Bean. It was unlikely to come back on its own.

All of a sudden, I became confused for a moment, so much that I was even somewhat doubting the events that had just transpired were merely my imagination.

I squeezed the Bronze Medal into my pocket, and then put all of the firewood in one of the deep bamboo baskets loaded on Old Yellow’s back, and then began walking towards home. I did not continue thinking about the Bronze Medal.

“Huang Jingyang, quickly take a bath, having gone out, it’s easy to get a cold from all the sweat.” Teacher Lin had already prepared hot water for me at home. Nowadays, Teacher Lin was already capable of using our house’s stove for boiling water and preparing meals. If it were not for the fact that Teacher Lin still dressed very neatly, completely unlike the other women in the village, it would have been very difficult to believe that she was from the city.

Teacher Lin helped me pour out the water, she also didn’t mind helping me take off my clothes.

“Where is that Bronze Medal of yours?” Teacher Lin had a very deep impression of that Bronze Medal which used to be tied up daily around my neck.

“String snapped, I put it in my pocket.” I said, once again recalling the strange events that had transpired in the mountains.

With this thought, I was capable of sensing a trace of connection with the Bronze Medal.

“Come out!” I said softly.

The Bronze Medal flew out, and in the blink of an eye arrived within my hands.

“You’re lying. Obviously it is within your hand.” Teacher Lin tried to find it in my pockets, found them empty, and turned her head to look and saw the Bronze Medal lying in my hand.

“Fly!” I said quite excitedly. Teacher Lin wasn’t able to hear even the slightest bit of what I had said just now.

The Bronze Medal flew up, making Teacher Lin’s eyes go wide with amazement.

“Huang Jingyang, how is this happening?” Teacher Lin asked while grabbing onto my arm. From her voice, I could hear some excitement, but at the same time, some anxiety.

“I don’t know, suddenly I discovered that I was capable of making the Bronze Medal fly.” I said looking distractedly.

Having been living together with me for such a long time, Teacher Lin already knew that I stood out from the masses. However, this was the first time she had come across a matter as strange as this. She also wasn’t able to understand what this was.

“Huang Jingyang, this kind a thing, you must not let others become aware of it, ok? You are very special, other people will reject you, you understand?” Teacher Lin said somewhat anxiously.

“Ok.” Teacher Lin’s commands, I would naturally obey.

“I’ll go get a red string, and tie up this Bronze Medal again.” Teacher Lin went to look for a red string, to securely tie up this Bronze Medal of mine.

Arbor Day came, Headmaster Han intended to have the uncultivated land all around the school be planted with trees. This way, the school would be surrounded with greenery. [TL note: For more details: [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Arbor\\_Day#China%5D](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Arbor_Day#China%5D)]

As far as students were concerned, running around in the fields was much more enjoyable than sitting in the classroom. Each and everyone was very active. At first light itself, they left from their homes towards school carrying aloft their hoes. [Robin: Once again, don’t misunderstand people, it’s the tool xD]

“Huang Jingyang, you still haven’t started. How lucky, Teacher Lin also lives in your home, yet you don’t have even the slightest bit of enthusiasm.” Huang Shulang was puffing hard as he carried the hoe aloft while he walked into our courtyard.

Upon seeing Huang Shulang’s hoe, I smiled, “Your family’s hoe has gone all rusty like that, but you still want to use it for digging?”

Huang Shulang said disdainfully: “You will take care whether or not I can dig, anyways what I bring is same as everyone. Has Teacher Lin started yet?”

I said smiling proudly: “Teacher Lin will naturally leave together with me.”

After putting on formal clothes, Teacher Lin came out from the house: “Huang Jingyang, let’s go.”

“Teacher Lin, I will also go together with you.” Huang Shulang shouted immediately.

I wasn't willing to let anyone else partake in going together with Teacher Lin to school, but I wasn't able to rebuff this damn thick-skinned fatty.

If I could secretly hit Huang Shulang on his head, that would be good enough. I thought in my mind.

Moving in consonance with that thought of mine, immediately, a golden light flew out from my chest. The Bronze Medal on my chest unexpectedly flew out, and with a "dong", struck Huang Shulang's head, after which it immediately flew back, swiftly drilling into my clothes.

"Ouch! Huang Jingyang, why are you throwing stones at me?" Huang Jingyang roared out furiously turning his head.

I was also very startled: "I am disinclined to do such a thing."

I opened my jacket button, and scooped out the Bronze Medal from inside my clothes. The Bronze Medal was clearly still tied up with a string.

How is this happening?



# My Daoist Life - Chapter 29

## Chapter 29 – The Usefulness of Primordial Qi Characters

Teacher Lin turned back to look at me, “Huang Jingyang, don’t do such a thing.”

“Teacher Lin, this Huang Jingyang is a dishonest person, he obviously threw a stone at my head, but is not admitting it. The place where he hit me is already starting to swell.”

Huang Jingyang was touching the swelling on his head, his eyes were somewhat red.

Teacher Lin stepped forward, using her hand to touch it, “It’s ok, it’s ok. Your head is very tough; it’s alright, it’s alright, it will stop hurting in a moment.”

Huang Shulang, as expected, said chiming in: “Yi, it really doesn’t hurt.”

I already knew that damned fatty was pretending, but I was disinclined to deal with him. At the moment, my entire attention was on the bronze medal that was suspended on my neck. I carefully looked at the spot from which the bronze medal was tied up; there was absolutely no chink. But then how did it separate itself from the rope and fly out just now? What a pity that I was walking behind Huang Shulang; no matter what thing hits his head, he would blame it on me.

I thought for a long time, but couldn’t figure out any reason to lead me to simply give up on it. I, at this age, still lack that persistence to see things through to the end.

“Huang Shulang, I am also carrying a hoe on my shoulder, how could I pick up a stone to throw at you? You must be injured.” I came up with a justification after thinking for a bit. A first grader, for the most part, cannot handle the tall wooden hoe. The weight of a wooden hoe is also not a small burden as far as a first grader is concerned. Indeed, one wouldn’t have any spare energy to go pick up a stone.

“Who knows whether or not you might have been carrying a stone in your hand in advance?” Huang Shulang was also somewhat stupid. Just a moment ago, was it really a stone that had smashed his head? Something definitely had hit the back of his head! However, Huang Shulang would absolutely not admit that he was unable to identify what he had been struck by.

“Then I will quickly collect some stones for you to try out, let’s see how you manage to hold the hoe while also throwing a stone.” I set the hoe aside, quickly picked up a stone from the ground, and threw it at Huang Shulang’s feet.

“I’ll try at once.” Huang Shulang definitely wouldn’t admit to being afraid, so taking the stone given by me, he turned around towards me. “If I throw a stone and hit you, then you can’t blame me.”

Huang Shulang gestured at me for a bit, but suddenly lost control of the hoe. Huang

Shulang was almost overwhelmed by the hoe and fell onto the ground. As the hand came loose, he was almost hit on the head by his own hoe. For Huang Shulang, this was indeed somewhat of a headache. He was suffering even while holding the hoe with his two hands, where would I find the strength to handle this extremely difficult matter?

I looked at Huang Shulang somewhat in a distress, and said while laughing: “Huang Shulang, don’t hesitate in throwing stones at me. Even if I get hit, no matter how serious the wound is, I won’t blame you.”

“Both of you stop fighting, or I will make you both stay back at school as punishment.” Teacher Lin got angry.

“Teacher Lin, fatty and I are just fighting as a joke with each other.” I said promptly.

“Right, right, we were just joking.” Huang Shulang was staring coldly at me, but still spoke in consonance with what I said.

“This kind of joke won’t do, what if somebody gets injured?” Teacher Lin was glaring at me.

All along the way, fooling around, we quickly arrived at the school.

Headmaster Han’s plans were very ambitious. Not only did he want to plant trees, he also wanted to dig up earth so that the surroundings of the school could be leveled. After that, the trees could be planted.

High Schoolers were responsible for moving the earth, while we lower graders were in charge of digging. Fortunately, no matter what grade or age you were, in rural areas, there would rarely be a child who couldn’t use a hoe. Even if it were someone like Huang Shulang, he too, was able to pick up the hoe and dig.

Nonetheless, Teacher Lin was highly keyed up. Every child was holding, in his hands, a hoe which could be said to be quite heavy, considering their age, and fooling around with it could end up with the children being badly bruised.

“Everyone must be careful. While digging, one must make sure that there is no one in front. Do you hear me?” Teacher Lin shouted.

Because of Teacher Lin, I was also one of enthusiasts in the class. My strength could be considered to be on the greater side in the class. Naturally, I am the one who is the most capable and efficient digger in the class.

Trees in the form of readily available saplings could be directly dug up from the mountains and brought here to be transplanted. Ba Jiao Mountain was quite a big mountain, and the thing that the mountain had the most of, was trees. However, Headmaster Han was quite fussy; he didn’t want ordinary trees, the trees must be beautiful. How would we children know which tree was beautiful and which was not? Just think that if we planted only fruit trees, then in the future when the fruits ripen, while going to school, one would also be able to have a good meal.

After the trees were planted, they must be irrigated to strengthen them. I was disinclined to go fetch water, so at once, I wrote 水, (Water) the seal script character, in the air, and from the sky, rain suddenly started to pour down heavily. Fortunately, it remained concentrated

on the tree that I had planted just a moment ago.

Huang Shulang, from the beginning, had been keeping an eye on me, trying to find out any faults with me. Naturally, he saw this astonishing scene.

“Teacher Lin, Teacher Lin, Huang Jingyang is playing with magic.” Huang Shulang immediately reported to Teacher Lin.

“Playing what game?” Teacher Lin came over immediately.

“Playing with rain magic.” Huang Shulang said, pointing at me.

“Huang Shulang, your eyes are so bad, ah. I am simply holding a basin to pour water.” I naturally wouldn’t admit it. Moreover, I was holding a tray which was prepared beforehand, just in case the rain got out of control and starting falling on my head; then the basin could be used for protection from the rain.

This time, even Teacher Lin wasn’t convinced, and thought that Huang Shulang was making up pretexts for goofing off: “Huang Shulang, you mustn’t dawdle around, hurry up and go fetch water. Not doing one’s own work, and even having Teacher Lin disturb others.”

Scowling miserably, Huang Shulang went to draw water, and after returning, he again saw me using strange methods to water the trees in the distance. In the end, as a result of looking too seriously, he missed a step and the basin that he was holding ended up falling on his own head.

“Splash!” The basin full of water fell down onto Huang Shulang’s head, making Huang Shulang wet from top to bottom, chilling him to the core.

“Huang Shulang, you can’t even do this little bit of work. Now you are soaking wet, return home at once and get changed.” Teacher Lin believed that Huang Shulang was doing such things because he wanted to avoid work. Teacher Lin was very angry.

Huang Shulang looked at me with hidden bitterness, then dispiritedly walked home.

Actually, there was a reason why there were no tall trees in the surroundings of the school. The only reason why the school building could be constructed here was because of the soil being exceptionally barren. Without the means to cultivate wasteland and the region being large in size, naturally, it would end up being a good place for establishing a school. Therefore, even though these trees were being planted into the ground, in actuality, not many of these trees would end up growing big and tall.

Mr. Han was passable as a teacher, but he was simply incapable of farming. He absolutely didn’t think over these realities. When Teacher Lin and I were going out, my Grandpa had said that Headmaster Han was playing house.

After the trees were planted, Headmaster Han organized the students every day for watering. Even the high school students were sent to public toilets to scoop out manure for fertilizer. However, the planted tree saplings remained wilted from the beginning. Without fertilizer, they were at least not in a bad condition, but after the application of fertilizer, all of a sudden, tracts and tracts of land died.

There was only one tree sapling which was still tenaciously surviving. When I went to

have a look, it was that tree which I had watered, only that I hadn't poured ordinary water, I had used the water transformed from the primordial qi character. I didn't expect that it would have such an effect.

My thoughts adapted immediately. If this water was so much more useful, if I were to use it for planting fruit trees which would bear fruit in the future, then wouldn't I be able to sell it for a lot of money? My mind became packed with all kinds of denominations of currency, which were flying in my mind all along. When I have money in the future, I would be able to go to the big cities and look at the distant places in the far off lands.

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 30

## Chapter 30 – Driven Away

I busied myself as soon as I reached home. In a village corner, there was a corner with fruit tree saplings. I didn't let this slip by, and without any care for what type of fruit tree it was, each and every fruit sapling was collected by me.

Grandpa noticed that I was rushing around in the house busy with something, and immediately asked out of curiosity: "Yang Yang, What are you up to again."

"He is growing fruit trees. He said that he wants to turn this place into Mount Huaguo. He wants to act like 'Great Sage the Equal of Heaven'!" Teacher Lin couldn't stop chuckling.

[TLNote: Mount Huaguo a.k.a. Flowers and Fruit

Mountain [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mount\\_Huaguo](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mount_Huaguo); 'Great Sage the Equal of Heaven' is the self-proclaimed title of Monkey King Sun Wukong from the Journey to the West]

"Ah, haha, that sentiment is good, My grandson will become Sun Wukong." Grandpa was also quite cheerful.

I paid no heed to what others were saying, I just continued to go about in accordance with my own ideas.

Grandpa said laughing: "Yang Yang, where did you get the fruit trees?"

"Aren't these everywhere? Wherever I saw them, I dug them up and brought back." I stuck out my buttocks while exerting all my strength to dig, the hoe caused the soil to fly high, and very quickly, soil settled on my own head, causing it to be covered entirely with mud. I didn't mind it in the least.

"Foolish boy, don't toil about in vain. These peach trees that you have dug up and brought back, are all our local wild peach trees. They grow on the roadside and bear peaches, which nobody would eat even if given for free. The plum tree dug up by you is called pig blood plum. It looks attractive but tastes bad. This pear tree, is also of wild variety, and the pears it bears are all made of wooden slags to the core and are absolutely not edible. Moreover, this persimmon tree, it is definitely a wild persimmon, it's does not grow big. Even if it ripens, it still gives a tarty taste. Furthermore, this grape tree, is capable of bearing grapes that can make one's urine run acidic...." Grandpa listed off a big pile of defects.

"In any case, I will grow fruit trees." I wasn't willing to give up.

"How about you let Grandpa buy some fruit tree saplings for you to bring home and plant?" Grandpa asked.

“No, Buying them would require spending money.” I couldn’t bear to spend money recklessly.

“Uncle, actually it doesn’t matter that much if these fruit trees are wild; in the future, they can be grafted.” With Teacher Lin being literate, this issue was also solved by her as easy as a bamboo splitting upon meeting a knife’s edge.

Huang Shulang, upon seeing me planting rows of fruit trees all around our house on the sloped land, quickly ran back to his house, intending to go replicate the scene in their house’s surroundings. Who could have imagined that as soon as he started digging, his father Huang Kui beat him till he was satisfied. After which he came crying to our house.

“Huang Jingyang, I suspect that I am an adopted son of Huang Kui.” Huang Shulang said to me while crying.

In fact, I had also begun to suspect for a while that I am not the biological son of my father and mother, and rather had been adopted. Otherwise, how is it that my father and mother had no concern regarding me. In these several years, they haven’t returned even once to come have a look at me. Earlier I was ill, but now I have gotten better, yet they are still treating me like this.

All of a sudden, Huang Shulang felt to me as a companion in a similarly miserable situation. I could even feel the plumpness of Huang Shulang look pleasing to the eye.

“How did you come to know that you were adopted?” I asked out of curiosity.

“When I returned home, I spoke of wanting to plant fruit trees, barely had planted a peach tree when that bastard Huang Kui beat me up. That old son of a bitch really acted ruthlessly, and beat me till my head grew a big swelling. You tell me if there still remains possibility of being a biological child?” Huang Shulang suddenly revealed the injury on his head, while continuing to sob spasmodically.

“Didn’t your house’s sloped land have vegetables? Then why plant peach trees?” I thought there to be something amiss.

“Right. But those kinds of vegetable plants can only be eaten once. If next year one thinks of eating again, then have to plant it nicely. Isn’t this too expensive? I straight away used my shovel to uproot those vegetables to make way for fruit trees. You plant Fruit trees once, and then you can eat well for many years. You tell me, am I not clever?” Huang Shulang forgot about the scars and the pain that he was feeling until a moment ago. When he spoke of this, an immense sense of pride came over him.

I was wondering, if it were not for him being a natural son, I was afraid that he would actually have been beaten to death before his father’s anger could get resolved.

“Huang Jingyang, let me help you plant trees, later when it bears fruit, let me eat my fill, ok?” Huang Shulang had come running to my house to show-off his innate business sense.

I somewhat worriedly looked at Huang Shulang’s great belly, but after pondering the gains and losses for a bit, I finally nodded. At the same time, in a remote place impoverished people. It is only natural, that my primary thought was that my pace would be faster with someone to help me.

Huang Shulang, hearing me agree, immediately began preparing to help me. From this moment onwards, the relationship between Huang Shulang and I became a lot stronger, after all, we were two people digging together in the same hole.

My actions of digging also spurred on my peers in the village, with each and every one going to dig in the surroundings of their houses. This resulted in the sounds of scolding to never stop for several days.

However, my way of planting was different from others, as I had a technique which ensured safety of the tree. After the tree is brought and planted, it needs to be watered. Other people go fetch water, I directly used the 水 (Water) seal script character, using primordial qi to turn it into rainwater to irrigate the tree. Regardless of the conditions, the fruit trees planted by me would grow lively.

However, the trees planted by me managed to make Li Shaoqing come straight down from the mountain top.

One day when I reached home after school, I saw Li Shaoqing walking all around the place that would become our house's Mt. Huaguo in the future. Returning home together with me, Black Bean immediately pounced, only Li Shaoqing stopped not far from there.

"WangWang, WangWang!" Although Black Bean expressed his anger at Li Shaoqing in the first moments, at the same time, it maintained cautious vigilance against Li Shaoqing.

"What are you doing here?" Since I first met him, I had always had a feeling of rejection against Li Shaoqing.

Huang Shulang filled with a sense of brotherhood, also rushed forward: "You must not destroy this place, I will shout and call down all the people in the village to come break your legs!"

Li Shaoqing laughed: "We frequently go do our shopping in your village, we even buy meat from your house everyday. When your father Huang Kui comes later, do you think he'll break my leg, or give his kid a beating?"

Li Shaoqing's words made Huang Shulang not dare to speak anything.

"What are you doing here then?" I was naturally aware that Li Shaoqing had come for me.

"The matter regarding which I have come, you should know very well. We have come across some trouble over there, and I'm thinking of taking your help. As long as you help me this once, I won't ever again come trouble you. Moreover, I won't have you toil for free. I can tell you, that the great tomb on your Ba Jiao Mountain's main peak is a tomb of a cultivator. There are many good things inside. If you are willing to lend me your assistance, I can let you have some of the things inside which are a cultivator's necessities. An ancient cultivator's tomb can have a lot of good things inside." Li Shaoqing wanted to entice me. Unfortunately, he had no idea that I was definitely not a serious cultivator. I had very little awareness of the cultivation things. Moreover, I didn't have much of an interest towards cultivation. The things told by him, I definitely didn't find them noteworthy.

"The historical relics at that place, all belong to the Country. You want to deceive me, no way. Moreover, don't think of coming here again, otherwise you will regret it." I was covertly condense primordial qi into a 雷 (Thunder) seal script character. As long as Li

Shaoqing dares to act rashly, I would straightaway throw the 雷 character at him.

Li Shaoqing was annoyed, but he could only leave straightforwardly. He wouldn't dare continue in a deadlock with me. I was a child, if indeed got angry, who would be able to prevent me from throwing out the 雷 (Thunder) character.

This character still hadn't been stimulated, but it was already putting tremendous pressure on Li Shaoqing. How could Li Shaoqing still dare to stay in that place, as he promptly broke into a run to get away.

I also already knew the danger if I were to lose control of 雷 (Thunder) character. So, I promptly walked several steps, and finally reaching an open area away with no people around to be seen, I threw out the 雷 character at once. Moreover, at the same time, I stimulated the primordial qi 风 (Wind) character, to blow the 雷 character far away.

It was also Li Shaoqing who was unlucky, he hadn't gone far, when he unexpectedly felt a huge threat approaching him from behind. He ran as if his life was on the line, but where could he go hide from the wind? Thunder and Lightning emerged from the empty sky and struck directly at Li Shaoqing.

"Ah!" Li Shaoqing screamed before directly falling down onto the ground. After a while, he let out a snort.

I noticed far in the distance Li Shaoqing being struck by Thunder and Lightning. It also gave me a scare, out of fear that if Li Shaoqing were to die, that would be really troublesome, as homicide was punishable with death. I didn't want to die.

Fortunately, after lying on the ground for a while, at last Li Shaoqing woke up.

"Huang Jingyang, look quickly. That damned fellow was hit by thunder and lightning. Serves him right, indeed. Unexpectedly, dared to have ideas on our Mt. Huaguo." Huang Shulang came skipping. He was really not afraid of getting into trouble and enjoyed watching a bustling scene. If anything, I was feeling really uncomfortable.

Li Shaoqing managed to get up crawling, there was still some static electricity in his hair, making them stand erect on his head. He gave off the appearance of a God of Thunder. After managing to scramble up from the ground, Li Shaoqing just scrambled.

"Truly, a bad person lives for a millennium. Even after being struck by thunder and lightning, he didn't die. Really troublesome." Huang Shulang said while feeling extremely regretful.

I let out a sigh of relief: "It was not fatal in the end."

Teacher Lin, due to having to help the detained students with school assignments, returned later than us. Seeing Huang Shulang and me at the back of the house talking in whispers, immediately walked up and said: "You two still haven't returned, what are you doing here?"

Huang Shulang at once ran away: "We didn't do anything."

Not afraid of godlike enemies, but afraid of pig-like teammates. This sentence is really true. Teacher Lin immediately began examining me closely.

"If I said we didn't do anything, would Teacher Lin believe it?" I said.



“What do you think?” Teacher Lin broke out into a smile.

When women are happy, they will laugh, when they are unhappy, they will also laugh. Making me, a child, distinguish between them, isn't that just plain bullying?

**Take your favorite novel wherever you go**  
**[novelepubs.xyz](http://novelepubs.xyz)**

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 31

## Chapter 31 – Fatty Wants To Practice Martial Arts

Ever since, my relationship with Huang Shulang had been improving, and even Teacher Lin had begun to believe that we two were working hands in glove with each other. Consequently, Huang Shulang, who was sitting close to me, shifted away. Huang Shulang got the “fortune” to be seated next to Li Lijuan.

As a result, tragedy struck Huang Shulang just as the time for siesta came.

A rural primary school didn't have a dormitory to enable children to take an afternoon nap. Consequently, during noon time, all of the students just lie down on their benches and tables. If one sits straight and puts his head down on the table to sleep, then after sleeping for a long time, the legs and feet would go numb. Therefore, of the two deskmates, one would sleep on the table, and one would sleep on the seat.

Huang Shulang's body was so large, if he were to lay down on the bench, he wouldn't be able to sleep, so he could only sleep on the table. Li Lijuan laid down on the bench. As a result, on the first day, Huang Shulang rolled down from the table and directly pressed down onto Li Lijuan.

Usually, girls mature earlier than boys, and become sensible quite early.

Li Lijuan pushed Huang Shulang down to the ground, and after that, used her leg to kick him incessantly while simultaneously cursing: “Rotten hoodlum, stinking scoundrel!”

Since the advent of TV dramas, girls have begun to mature much earlier. Huang Shulang was already muddleheaded from sleeping, and in addition to that... with a blank look on his face, he didn't dare to retaliate, while Ma Jindong straightaway ran to call over Teacher Lin.

Although I, as a person, was sitting in the classroom, my mind was roaming beyond the ninth heaven. By the time I woke up, I was able to hear Huang Shulang's loud scream. I, too, didn't know whether or not this fellow, by accompanying his father as he butchered and ate leftovers from other house's meat, managed to learn to scream like a pig so vividly and perfectly.

My relationship with Huang Shulang was already unlike that of the past. Hearing this fellow screaming, I naturally wouldn't let things continue as they were. I quickly ran and pulled away classmate Li Lijuan: “Do you want to kick him to death, do you want a life sentence?”

“I'll kick him to death, rotten scoundrel.” Li Lijuan still felt that she hadn't vented enough.

“Huang Shulang, what did you do?” I asked.

“I also don’t know? I just now woke up, and I was already lying on the ground.” Huang Shulang was scowling miserably.

“Huang Shulang took advantage of me while I was sleeping, and pressed down on me. Rotten scoundrel!” Li Lijuan cursed while pointing at Huang Shulang.

“Ah!”

A section of the classroom cried out, it seemed that there were a lot of precocious children in the class.

Teacher Lin walked in, and after hearing of the matter, promptly said: “You all are still children. You musn’t learn from those people in the TV. Huang Shulang had fallen asleep, by no means did he intend to drop down. It was not deliberate. However, you must note one point for the future. Student Li Lijuan, beating up people is also wrong. In case if something like this happens in the future, you must hand over this matter to the teacher to deal with. Everyone move on and go to sleep. Nobody is allowed to make noise; otherwise, they would be detained after school to come clean up.”

Teacher Lin glanced at me, as if any matter that happened in the class must have some relation to me. Only this time, I was still forthright.

After school, Huang Shulang took my hand and said passionately: “Yang Yang, teach me martial arts, ok? I know that you are able to do martial arts. Even that person who had come down from the mountaintop was afraid of you.”

As soon as I heard of Huang Shulang wanting to learn martial arts, I couldn’t help but softly laugh: “You also want to learn martial arts, are you able to suffer hardships?”

I knew the Xing Yi Quan Five Fists, but looking at Huang Shulang’s figure and his perseverance, I was really suspecting whether he would be able to practice even the basic movements of any of them.

“I certainly can suffer hardships. From now on, I shall lie on firewood and taste gall. When I succeed in learning martial arts, the first order of business would be to settle accounts with Li Lijuan.” Huang Shulang was unusually resentful regarding this consummate beating of him by Li Lijuan. [TLNote: Lying on firewood and tasting gall is an idiom to signify one to be suffering patiently, but be firmly resolved on revenge]

It was rare to see such a firm and determined expression on Huang Shulang’s face, so I agreed.

“Then, first come practice the chopping fist. If you are able to practice the chopping fist nicely, there won’t be anyone in the class who would be able to beat you up.” I knew that Huang Shulang wouldn’t be able to persevere for a long time, so I just randomly picked a set of movements from the Xing Yi Quan Five Fists for Huang Shulang to learn.

Huang Shulang didn’t last for even five minutes before he began crying for his father and yelling for his mother: “Yang Yang, isn’t there anything that is a bit easier than this Chinese boxing? I have barely begun practicing boxing and you have already taken out such high level kung fu for me, how could I learn it? Isn’t there any martial art like the Star Sucking Great Skill from 《Smiling, Proud Wanderer》?”

[TLNote: Star Sucking Great Skill is the martial art for which Ren Woxing is renowned

for in “Smiling, Proud Wanderer” a famous Jin Yong novel. Also, the online nickname Ren (RWX) from Wuxiaworld is inspired from this character Ren Wo Xing.

[https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The\\_Smiling,\\_Proud\\_Wanderer](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Smiling,_Proud_Wanderer)]

“There isn’t. I don’t know if Star Sucking Great Skill really exists or not, but I know only this one kung fu. If you like it, then learn; otherwise, don’t learn. In any case, you have thick skin; having Li Lijuan beat you up wouldn’t make you go short of fat.” I deliberately mentioned the most humiliating thing to Huang Shulang.

“I’ll learn it!” Huang Shulang said while biting his teeth.

This time, Huang Shulang persevered for more than half an hour. By the time when Teacher Lin returned home, Huang Shulang was already limply lying down on the floor.

“Huang Jingyang, did you play some trick on Huang Shulang?” Teacher Lin asked reproachfully.

I laughingly said: “This cannot be blamed on me. He, on his own accord, asked me to teach him martial arts. Teacher Lin you yourself have said, students amongst themselves should help each other. I have been very selflessly helping Huang Shulang. If you don’t believe, then ask him yourself.”

Even though Huang Shulang was very exhausted, he was still able to happily say: “I shall become a martial arts master. When I become a martial arts master, I shall beat Li Lijuan up till she calls out for her mom and dad.”

“You are a really shameless boy, that Li Lijuan’s house is already so poor, yet you still want to go bully her.” Teacher Lin immediately became partial towards Li Lijuan.

Huang Shulang wanted to cry, “There is really no justice, ah. Does it seem that the person who is bullying is me?”

Li Shaoqing, after suffering a big loss at my hands earlier, didn’t come to the village for a very long time. Liu Jinan actually came quite frequently, but he didn’t say much about archaeological matters.

However, one day, he inadvertently let slip that the Archaeology team had already made a breakthrough, making everyone strained as Jiu Kuai had found the accurate position of that cultivator from ancient times’ coffin.

Hong!

Several days later, a loud noise nearly turned over almost all of the tiles and bricks in the Ba Jiao Village, but even if it were so, there were many houses whose glasses were shattered.

“What is going on? Is it an earthquake?” Teacher Lin immediately rushed out from the room while pulling me.

“Look at that!” I said while pointing my finger at Ba Jiao Mountain’s main peak.

The only thing to be seen was a column of thick smoke rising from Ba Jiao Mountain’s main peak. It was clearly the source for that great explosion sound from just a moment ago.

“They are definitely using explosives to open up the ancient tomb.” Grandpa said.

However, exactly what was going on, nobody knew. Also, ever since that day, those few members of the archaeology team were not seen again. Even Liu Jinan, who would be frequently seen coming to Ba Jiao Village, also never appeared again.

Li Shaoqing had cultivation, yet he also didn’t appear.

What exactly had transpired within the tomb, no one had a clue.

Later, the villagers went up to have a look, and aside from discovering an unexpectedly large cave on the mountain top, they didn’t discover anything else. That large cave looked like a big open mouth, opening up wide like the mouth of a big man-eating monster, preparing to chomp down at any time. It seemed unusually terrifying.

Even though the villagers were anxious that this cave would turn into a source of disaster for Ba Jiao Village; due to the cave being really immense, there was no easy way for it to be plugged. There was no other option but to leave it as it was and come down. After returning to the village, all the villagers warned their children, that they mustn’t go to the Ba Jiao Mountain under any condition, and especially not to the main peak.

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 32

## Chapter 32 – Summons

Huang Lisheng quickly reported this matter to higher ups. Soon, a lot of people arrived. These higher ups stayed for a while in the village, and then suddenly one day, they all withdrew. Nobody knew what exactly had transpired on the main peak of Ba Jiao Mountain. What had happened to those people of the Archaeology team. Furthermore, what had happened with those higher ups in the Ba Jiao Mountain's main peak.

The village had suddenly become quite cold and desolate. At night, the households would shut their doors; nobody would dare to go outside at night.

“Huang Jingyang, you tell what exactly had happened on Ba Jiao Mountain's main peak?” Huang Shulang was standing in a very unsightly manner. He also didn't manage to practice martial arts, but reportedly, his appetite had increased. His body weight had continued to soar. Every time I tried to set an example during practice with him. I already knew that this kind of thing would be the outcome. Also, I hadn't counted on him practicing to become a martial arts expert.

“How would I know? If you keep doing things like fishing for three days and drying the net for two days, then don't even talk about practicing boxing; just this body weight would soon reach the level of my family's pigs.” The Xing Yi Quan Five Fists were making “hu hu” sounds within my hands. As I took a step, the bedding laid down on the ground and trembled.

Huang Shulang looked straight into my eyes, “When will I be able to reach that level?”

“I reckon that you wouldn't be able to reach this level even in your next life. You practice boxing but are afraid of hardships; instead, you're practicing fart boxing.” I ill-humoredly said while glancing at Huang Shulang.

“Don't be like that. Huang Jingyang, you must teach me something that is fierce, yet easy to learn. All these sets of movements are really difficult. You saw how I practiced for so long, see how much I'm sweating? Other people go from easy to difficult, but the first thing that you got me started on was so hard. Me being unable to follow is because your ability as a teacher is not good.” I really couldn't see; as Huang Shulang had grown up, his IQ and his glibness had increased.

I was disinclined to be long-winded with him: “It was you who shamelessly beseeched me, wanting to learn boxing from me. I taught you nicely, but you still are unable to learn. Do you really think I am obliged to you? You payed obeisance to Master. Master, Master, Teacher is just like a Father, if a son doesn't obey his Father, then that means he is in need of a spanking.”

[TLNote: 师父 = Master, in which 师 denotes Teacher, 父 denotes Father; So, HJY is just breaking the term down for fatty]

I directly got into action; with Fatty's ability, let alone talking about retaliating, he didn't even have the ability to resist. He was straight-up beaten by me for a while. It must be said that this Huang Shulang was also in need of a spanking. Ever since his spell of being beaten by me, he had begun practicing boxing much more honestly. I had experience of directly dealing with those who pull glib-talking with me. With regards to Huang Shulang, it just required simple violence.

The people in the village regarded the main peak of Ba Jiao Mountain as a restricted zone. I also didn't dare to go there. However, there was something in that place which seemed to have been beckoning me all along. I had multiple dreams, I even dreamt of myself appearing in a bottomless cave. I kept running, but I couldn't find the exit. I didn't know what exactly there was in that place that was attracting me.

I was once sitting under the eaves on a stool, with my eyes looking at the Ba Jiao Mountain main peak that was far off into the distance. Watching, watching, it was as if my soul had left me.

"Huang Jingyang, why are you giving off that blank expression?" Teacher Lin tugged at me.

"It's no-nothing." I said.

"Since you have nothing to do, you should read lots of books. In the city, a child your age would learn in class every day. You, in Ba Jiao Elementary School, are getting good results, but when you go to the city, you will find students who are much better than you. If you want to beat the college entrance exam in the future, then you will have to compete with students from all over the province. If you aren't able to prepare well ahead of time, you would fall behind others. You're such a smart kid, in the future, you should go to the colleges in big cities, you know right? You still want to marry Teacher Lin. If you don't study, then in the future, you won't be able to attend the colleges in the big cities, then how will you marry Teacher Lin?" Teacher Lin clearly understood my most intimate feelings.

What Teacher Lin said, immediately made me anxious. For several days, I didn't go out to foolishly play with Huang Shulang, and instead spent time earnestly reading books bought by Teacher Lin for me.

Huang Shulang wasn't able to adapt to this sudden transformation in me. He also came running to my home to read books. Only just that this fellow only read books with pictures. Teacher Lin had bought some comics, the covers of which had already become worn from Huang Shulang's flipping.

If one spends the days of his life living just like this, day after day, growing up slowly, then perhaps I, too, would slowly disappear amongst the ordinary teenagers in the village. However, I knew that I couldn't grow up as an ordinary teenager, and later become indistinct.

From the Ba Jiao Mountain's main peak, the beckoning for me became more and more clear. As soon as I closed my eyes, it was as if I could hear a sound coming over from Ba

Jiao Mountains calling out.

“Huang Jingyang!”

As if someone was shouting for me from a distance.

I suddenly sat up, only to discover that I had been sleeping on my bed.

Such violent movements of mine also managed to disturb Teacher Lin who came over.

“Huang Jingyang, did you have a bad dream?” Teacher Lin found a towel and wiped the sweat from my head.

I nodded, and did not tell Teacher Lin the actual situation.

“What happened in the nightmare?” Teacher Lin asked with a smile.

“I, I forgot.” I said.

Teacher Lin let out a yawn: “It’s too late, tomorrow you need to go to school too. So quickly go to sleep.”

Teacher Lin patted me on my shoulder.

Although I reclined back down onto the bed, my eyes still remained open. Perhaps Teacher Lin was quite tired, as she soon fell asleep. However, how could I sleep.

I also didn’t know why I couldn’t let go of Ba Jiao Mountain. What exactly was it that was beckoning me. However, that place has also swallowed so many people, it so scary, yet I was still thinking of going to take a look?

During the day, I fished out some money that I had secretly stowed away in my cabinets, in an old cloth bag, during my childhood. This was my little cash reserve. Inside it were a hundred yuan. The money received as gifts during the new year’s time, as well as the pocket money received by me from Grandpa, was all stashed here. Nobody knew about it. I secretly took out fifty yuan from it, and put them into my pocket.

Besides the school, there was a small kiosk, which had a variety of things. It was not particularly eye-catching in the village. The kiosk not only sold snacks, but also hardware, pesticides and fertilizers could be bought. I bought a flashlight, two lighters and a few pressed biscuits, plus a few candles.

The reason why I had prepared these things was because I had read about it in the book purchased by Teacher Lin. I was already determined to go to Ba Jiao Mountain and to brave the dangers this time. I didn’t know how dangerous this trip of mine would be, but I still had yet to reach the age of fear. Although logic tells me not to go, I still very much want to try.

“Huang Jingyang, the biscuits bought by you, are they for me?” Huang Shulang glimpsed at the biscuits I was holding in my hands. I quickly put the biscuits into my school bag, after which, I gave Huang Shulang a kick.

“Don’t even think about it. These biscuits are going to be of use to me.” I didn’t pay attention to Huang Shulang who had the facial expression of one waiting at a funeral.

“Stingy” Not being able to eat the biscuits made Huang Shulang very upset.



“You shouldn’t even think about being able to eat them, unless.....” I said smiling.

“Unless what? As long as you give me the biscuits to eat, I will do anything.” Huang Shulang spoke without even the slightest hesitation.

“Then, you go home and kill Huang Kui.” I laughed in spite of myself.

“Ah?” Huang Shulang’s eyes opened wide.

“Heh heh, were you really considering patricide?” I looked at Huang Shulang’s hesitant appearance, and absolutely couldn’t restrain my laughter. If Uncle Huang, that father of his, knew that Huang Shulang was so conflicted, wouldn’t he just pre-emptively strike?

“Cannot, ah. It won’t be good. Brother, I will call you Eldest Brother, please don’t keep me guessing. Tell me, what do you want me to do?” Huang Shulang asked.

I then spoke my true purpose: “Go to Ba Jiao Mountain’s main peak. You will come along with me.”

“Ah? Isn’t that ten deaths, but no life? Forget about it, I don’t need to eat. I cannot put my life at stake for the sake of eating.” Huang Shulang promptly withdrew his hand and turned back.

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 33

## Chapter 33 – Disciples Are Raised Only For A Moment Of Crisis

I caught hold of Huang Shulang, who was preparing to flee. No matter what was said, I must have a scapegoat. Such a great meat shield, why would I give it up in vain. Disciples were raised only for a moment of crisis.

“Your conduct still doesn’t have even a bit of ideal?” I asked earnestly.

“Master, ah. I don’t want ideals to turn into final wishes of the departed, ah?” Huang Shulang scowled miserably. This fellow really adapts to his surroundings nicely. During this time, staying close to me, he had raised his IQ by a lot, making me feel my IQ fall short somewhat.

“Forget it. Anyways you really have Lord Ye’s passion for dragons, and you still think of becoming a martial arts expert. At that time, I said nothing. However, I can tell you this clearly now, since you do not have ideals, from now on, do not call me Master. The tie between us of a Master and Apprentice is already over. Later, you just go home, eat lots of fattened up animals raised by you, and live out the rest of your life. I, your Master, will become a cultivator, going against the heavens and the currents of fate.” I waved my hand and then, without even turning my head, went straight home.

[TLNote: Idiom: “Lord Ye’s passion for dragons” ]

This fatty really does have masochistic tendencies, and hearing me say this, his expression changed immediately, as he promptly came chasing after me: “Master, the words spoken by you are crystal clear. Although I am a timid man, I want to say something straight from my heart. I still want to become a martial arts master. Growing up, I have come to understand that the maximum that I can receive is my father’s business of butchering pigs. I reckon that marrying a woman wouldn’t be difficult, but if I wanted to marry someone who is as pretty as a model, then it would be a bit troublesome. Therefore, from childhood, I had a dream: to grow up and become a martial arts expert, and to take, as wife, a woman as pretty as Ren Yingying.

[TLNote: (1) When Fatty talks about not having difficulty marrying a woman, he uses a derogatory term suited more to ‘older ladies’ but are still referred to as women. (2) Ren Yingying is daughter of Ren Woxing from Smiling, Proud Wanderer a Jin Yong novel ]

I laughed; such a fatty still thought of wanting to marry Ren Yingying. However, I didn’t turn my head and continued to walk home. In any case, Fatty’s curiosity had already been provoked. If I were to take notice of him too early, then it wouldn’t be good as this fellow might also renege.

I sped up my footsteps. Fatty chased after me, puffing and blowing: “Master, Master, how are you walking so fast? You tell me, what is this cultivation?”

I stopped at this moment, “Do you really want to know?”

“Yes.” Huang Shulang forcefully nodded his head.

“Good, it seems like unless I show off my abilities, you would still doubt your Master’s abilities.” I conveniently condensed my primordial qi into a seal script water character, and straight up activated it atop Huang Shulang’s head.

“Hua la!” (Sound of water falling)

“Ah! It’s raining!” Huang Shulang was drenched like a drowned rat as he ran very fast. As he turned his head up to look, a scorching sun shined over his head. Huang Shulang immediately felt a cold wind blow through his body.

“Ghosts, Master, there are ghosts!” Huang Shulang was trembling from head to toe.

I was indeed somewhat worried. If I really took this fellow along, then when the time comes, not only would he not be a good meat shield, rather, wouldn’t he be a great burden?

I waved my hand, and very elegantly, activated a primordial qi 风 (Wind) character. A strong gust of wind began to blow directly into Huang Shulang. Luckily, Huang Shulang’s figure was quite huge, so although the wind was strong, it couldn’t blow away Huang Shulang. However, Huang Shulang was unable to open his eyes due to the wind blowing. As the wind stopped, it was just in time as the water had cleaned Huang Shulang’s body. After all, this was water transformed from primordial qi, it was quite different from ordinary water.

“Yi?” Even if Huang Shulang was stupid, he knew that something was fishy. He looked left and right, then after pondering for a while, he said, “Master, the villagers have earlier said that you were a ghost of bad omen. So it turns out, you really are a ghost.”

“Ah!” Very quickly, Huang Shulang let out a miserable shriek; he had been sent flying back tens of feet from my kick. Soaring into the sky, before falling heavily down onto the ground. Also fortunately, during this time, Huang Shulang had undergone my devilish training regime, otherwise with this fall, this fatty would have been turned into a giant meat patty.

“Huang Shulang, you dare to speak to your Master like this. Are you tired of living?” I asked as I walked towards Huang Shulang.

“No, no. Master, didn’t you tell it to me clearly just now? Are you really a cultivator?” Huang Shulang asked.

“Didn’t you get a taste just now? If you want to speak one more time, I can benevolently satisfy your desire.” I laughed as I looked maliciously at Huang Shulang.

“Eh, no need, no need. I have already gotten a taste. Master, you are saying that if I go to Ba Jiao Mountain’s main peak with you, then I would also be able to learn that kind of magic you displayed a moment ago from you?” Huang Shulang asked.

“This I cannot guarantee, to learn Daoist techniques requires natural aptitude. If your natural aptitude is too bad, then there’s just no hope. However, even if you are not able to learn Daoist techniques, it would still be very easy to become a martial arts expert.” A

smile broke out on my face. Fatty was thinking of extricating himself from my devilish grip? Eh, he should be in the middle of my palm, definitely not so easy.

Therefore, Huang Shulang began to get anxious, and in this anxious state, began using his brain to calculate the pros and cons. Probably even after a long time, he couldn't figure out whether the advantages outweighed the shortcomings, or the shortcomings outweighed the advantages, so he could only give up, "Master, I'll go explore along with you; you will give me some life-saving objects right? Such as a magic weapon, spirit artifact, etc."

"In your dreams. These magic weapons and spirit artifacts, Master also doesn't have any. I, at most, can give you a hoe. You can also use it as a shoulder pole." I angrily kicked at Huang Shulang. [TLNote: But is that a big-booty hoe, doe?]

If I were to ask him, he would behave like an apprentice, but he didn't have even the slightest bit of the ideological consciousness of an apprentice.

"Master, why do I always get beaten?" Huang Shulang wanted to cry because of the pain.

"What would you know? The strictest teacher has the most outstanding disciple." I said in all seriousness.

Regarding this matter, secrecy was of the utmost importance. I used the later half of the journey, all along repeatedly telling Huang Shulang that he must not divulge this secret; otherwise, he would be put into place according to our Sect rules.

"Master, what are the contents of our Sect's rules?" Huang Shulang, after being lectured by me quite a few times, he asked puzzledly.

"Our Sect rules are that, when we both have the same opinion, then you must listen to me. When we both have differing opinions, then you also must listen to me." I said after carefully thinking for a while.

"Then when would I be listened to?" Huang Shulang said while feeling wronged.

"En, this issue is very simple. You are the Eldest Apprentice; when I am not there, you are the Eldest." I gave Huang Shulang some taste of power.

"Master, when will you accept another apprentice?" Huang Shulang asked.

"If I were to take in Li Lijuan, do you think that she would be able to listen to what you say?" I said while laughing.

"That is definitely impossible. That girl is too fierce. Very strong. I definitely can't defeat her. You mustn't, under any condition, let her study martial arts. I cannot defeat her, when she hasn't learn martial arts. If she were to study martial arts, then I would have to suffer her bullying for this entire life of mine." Huang Shulang couldn't see even the slightest bit of hope.

"Relax, you are the eldest martial apprentice, I will later teach you the fiercest martial arts." I suddenly recalled the most crucial matter, "Are you ready to go or not?"

"Master, I still need to think." Huang Shulang, this time, very quickly ran back home.

In any case, if he doesn't arrive on the weekend, I also wouldn't be anxious. This Huang Shulang fellow, I wasn't the slightest bit worried. Unable to pass even a single day, he

came running over on his own.

“I am prepared to go along with you.” Huang Shulang came running to my side.

“Ok, this is like my good apprentice, ah.” I patted Huang Shulang’s shoulders.

“Master, from the treasures that we would bring back, how many would be in my share?” Huang Shulang came to me and whispered in my ears.

“Ah!” Huang Shulang again flew out.

“I very laboriously taught you martial arts, but you still don’t have any filial piety, and you even feel that you have the right to say this to me!” I was indeed very angry. What thoughts did he have, saying this to me?

“You two rotten brats whispering to each other here, what are you talking about?” Teacher Lin had finally discovered that as of late, Huang Shulang and I had been frequently talking in whispers. She definitely knew that we were up to something, but didn’t think that my courage was so unexpectedly huge as to dare to plan to go to Ba Jiao Mountain’s main peak to explore.

“Nothing, we were just discussing who would be the leader when we go to the mountains to pick mushrooms this weekend.” I immediately came up with an excuse.

“Were you? Picking mushrooms is such an interesting thing. Why didn’t you call me?” Teacher Lin’s eyes flashed, immediately making me regret not coming up with a better excuse.

“Grandpa doesn’t allow us to go far up the Ba Jiao Mountain’s main peak, we can only go a bit of the way. Walking in the mountain is going to be very exhausting.” I had no choice but to spout even more lies to cover my lie, and also to dispel Teacher Lin’s thoughts.

Hearing this, Teacher Lin’s eyebrows became erect, like willow leaves, and knocking two chestnuts directly on my head: “Rotten brat, you think that Teacher Lin cannot compare to you brats?”

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 34

## Chapter 34 – Entering the Secret Cave

Teacher Lin naturally couldn't be brought along. If Teacher Lin were to come along, would I still be able to adventure in Ba Jiao Mountain's main peak? Naturally, it would be impossible. Teacher Lin definitely wouldn't agree to let it go. Although Ba Jiao Mountain has been around since such a long time, the things within the mountain still felt unusually fresh.

Till sleeping time, I had been continuously thinking of ways to get rid of Teacher Lin. Therefore, I tossed and turned but couldn't sleep.

"Don't fiddle about." Teacher Lin said sleepily.

I promptly quieted down, closed my eyes, but still couldn't sleep.

The weather was very warm, rural areas began to get lively in the night, and sounds of frogs were already resounding continuously in the fields. Also, all kinds of insects were calling and birds were crying incessantly.

From time to time, a gust of wind would blow, and the rustling of tree leaves would echo. The branches on the window sill would sway.

"Come quickly....."

I suddenly shook, that voice seemingly resounded within my ears again. That was the voice that had been coming over from Ba Jiao Mountain's main peak!

Teacher Lin ought to have fallen asleep already, I could already hear the serene and deep breathing.

The cries of insects and frog calls in the field had suddenly stopped. The night in Ba Jiao Village had unexpectedly become so lonely.

I promptly squeezed into the quilt and tightly hugged Teacher Lin.

Early morning, by the time I woke up, dawn had already broke. Teacher Lin had already woken up, and seeing me open my eyes, she hit me on the head.

"Rotten brat, didn't even have the slightest bit of sincerity while going to sleep at night. Always kept moving about."

I lowered my head, and didn't say a word.

"Teacher Lin is joking with you. As a boy, how are you so shy. Almost the same as a girl." Teacher Lin, seeing my appearance, said chuckling.

"Teacher Lin, Huang Shulang said that today, he would be going to visit his relatives, so it

won't be possible to go. In the morning, we won't go pick mushrooms." This was the pretext that I had thought up last night. I had begun to feel my mental capacity become increasingly insufficient. I don't know if it was because of staying with Fatty for such a long time. It seems that in the future, I must stay away from Fatty as much as possible.

"When did Huang Shulang come again yesterday? It seems that I didn't see him? Are you preparing to go do something mischievous. Afraid that me going with you will spoil your mischief?" Teacher Lin had been sleeping with me on the same bed, how could it not be possible to gain some influence from me?

I had unexpectedly overlooked this important issue, "It is not so, didn't we go to cut fish grass in the afternoon yesterday? Huang Shulang told me in the village."

"Good, good. Don't you know that to cover a lie, you need to speak a hundred lies? Teacher Lin was joking with you. Do you really think that Teacher Lin would love to go play together with you brats?"

I had actually believed what Teacher Lin had said to be true, and had unexpectedly forgotten that the prettier the woman, the more she deceives.

"Teacher Lin, I'm sorry. The main reason is that Huang Shulang said that if you went along, that you would interfere with our matters." I sincerely explained.

"Ah? Do you still want to throw me off?" Teacher Lin's eyebrows stood vertically like willows.

I had begun to sweat from my head, deceiving us children like this, is this really good? Fortunately, perhaps Teacher Lin also thought that it was not a good idea for the old to bully the young, and at last, allowed me to go out.

I placed the things that I had prepared beforehand into the deep baskets on Old Yellow's back. Old Yellow, compared to the other oxen in the village, has more than a frame to transport goods. In addition to putting a frame on one side, the basket could be put unobstructed on the other side. Old Yellow was really an ox working as a horse.

Black Bean also followed behind. This time, I did not let Black Bean overtake me. Going to a dangerous place, taking one for transporting goods, and taking the other for putting its nose to use. I felt that security had been doubled all of a sudden.

Huang Shulang's parents got up early every day to buy pork. Huang Shulang was the only one in his family who slept in.

"Damned Fatty, get out of bed!" I lifted the Fatty's cup.

Fatty drowsily opened his eyes, and upon seeing me, immediately got up very quickly. These fast reactions had been obtained from the training that I had already imparted.

"Ma-Master. Why are you so early?" Fatty conveniently wore a set of clothes.

"Have you prepared the things I made you prepare yesterday?" I asked.

"Yes! The rechargeable lamp is already full. However, I don't have eatables; yesterday was held up due to light. My parents don't give me pocket money. I didn't have any money to buy." Huang Shulang sought an excuse.

I obviously knew that Huang Shulang begrudges to part with money. This fellow had inherited his parents' careful planning and meticulous accounting.

"Never mind, let it be. Let's set off. We must come out from inside, before it gets dark. Who knows what kind of ghastly things are there inside."

"Master, do we really have to go?" Huang Shulang was, once again, cowering.

"Why, are you intending on reneging on a promise?" I was intently watching Huang Shulang.

Huang Shulang promptly shook his head: "No, no. I was just worried about Master's safety."

"Fuck off. You are not worried about me, but rather yourself. Never mind, whether to go or not to go, hurry up and make a decision. I cannot waste my time with you." I didn't want to continue wasting time.

Huang Shulang hesitated for a long time, before very painfully finally deciding: "Going."

"This is right." I patted Huang Shulang's shoulders.

"Master, can I write my will first?" Huang Shulang spoke another sentence.

My leg flew out into a kick. Huang Shulang, unsurprisingly, screamed out and flew tens of feet away. However, one mustn't look at Huang Shulang's violent screaming; in fact, he doesn't have even a single wound. I just saw that Huang Shulang was unhappy, but didn't want to actually hurt him.

After entering the cave, one must be accustomed to the interplay of light and darkness, with some lights illuminating the front, while darkness chased from behind.

The point of explosion on Ba Jiao Mountain's main peak had turned into a huge cave.

The cave penetrated straight down into the mountain's depths. I used the flashlight to illuminate the inside, only to discover that unexpectedly, the cave was immeasurably deep.  
[1]

Huang Shulang picked up a stone and threw it down, but even after a long time, no sound of the stone hitting the ground could be heard. There was no sound for a very long time.

Huang Shulang hastily retreated several steps: "Master, ho-how do we go in?"

Huang Shulang's two legs kept trembling non-stop.

I didn't pay any attention to Huang Shulang, just took the rechargeable lamp from him, and shone it on the underground. The cave was very deep, so deep that the bottom couldn't be seen. The two sides were very steep. This cave looked like a knife had been used to slice it. I was also anxious, but in the cave was apparently something that was beckoning to me. Unless I went down to have a look, I wouldn't be able to feel at ease.

"I have a way." I searched all around in the main peak. Already two groups of people had come here, that archaeological team perhaps didn't bring anything to go over. However, the rescue team that came later, should definitely have brought some equipment to go over. Such a deep cave, would certainly require the use of ropes. A rope was not something of value, and moving it down from the peak would not be so easy. They might



have discarded it here on the mountains. I searched in all directions. I very quickly found the tents left behind by the archaeological team. Naturally, there wouldn't be any valuable things left behind in the tents, but the tent had several sets of ropes that I was looking for. Also, there were several sets of miner hats. Turning on the switch over the head, it unexpectedly still had light. I readily took a hat for myself to wear on my head, and threw a comparatively newer looking hat to Huang Shulang.

Huang Shulang was very much afraid in the beginning, but after taking such conveniences, he was immediately enlivened. Wearing the miner hat on his head, he rushed happily to me: "Master, see, after putting on this hat, don't I look like a member of the archaeology team."

"Fatty, when I go down first, you keep a watch out above. You slowly let Old Yellow and Black Bean down towards me. When I am safe, you can get down. If you don't dare to go down, you can keep watch above. In any condition, you mustn't run away, ok?" I was somewhat worried that Huang Shulang, out of fright, would leave half-way.

Huang Shulang then nodded his head: "I will get down. If I alone stayed above, then I would get afraid."

At this time, a lot of birds in the forest let out cries in unison, scaring Huang Shulang from top to bottom.

"I-I really regret coming here today with you." Huang Shulang said with a sullen expression.

"Immature! Only after suffering hardships can you be moulded into an upright person. If you want to become a martial arts expert, how can you not suffer even the slightest bit of hardship?" I knew at this stage, there was no room for regret in putting trust in the wrong person.

I didn't have many choices at my end. Amongst the village children, except for Fatty, each and every one stayed far away.

I couldn't take Teacher Lin to adventure, right?

Black Bean was actually much braver than Huang Shulang. I tightly grasped the ends of the bamboo basket, and sitting down into the basket, shouted at Huang Shulang: "Quick, quick, release the rope, slowly."

Huang Shulang had no experience, didn't exercise firm control, and as the rope loosened, Black Bean and I began free-falling down to the ground. I thought that it was all over, I really trusted the wrong person, ah.

However, the bamboo basket suddenly stopped, and the bamboo basket jumped all of a sudden. Black Bean and I almost fell off the bamboo basket. I later came to know that it was Old Yellow who had accomplished the deed. Unexpectedly, immediately knowing the use of the rope, he stepped on it directly. Old Yellow's foot was therefore injured. Later, as Huang Shulang became more and more experienced, we didn't have any more issues. These ropes were used by the rescue team. Their length was quite good, and capable of reaching the cave's bottom. In fact, we hadn't reached the end yet, only below, the cave had slowly turned inclined. It became possible to drop down to the ground to walk.

I shook the rope heavily, to let Huang Shulang know that I had already reached the ground.

Huang Shulang didn't have such an easy time getting down. I found a figure eight descender in the rope. This made us spend a lot of time to understand how to use this thing.<sup>[2]</sup>

When Huang Shulang arrived at the ground, he was already gasping for breath: "Hu..... Hu..... Master, I really risked my life today. This fear must have lessened a jin of flesh from me, right? Later, you should let me learn high-level martial arts cheats, right? I like that man and woman together cultivation skill the most."

"Fuck off!" I really lost face big time. He is a damned fatty, but his requests are so damn high. This kind of kung fu, I also want. Thinking that later, I can practice together with Teacher Lin. Certainly, at that time, the thoughts of us first graders, were still very pure.<sup>[3]</sup>

[1] The Cave mentioned in this chapter is a type of vertical cave, I am confused whether to call it a Pit cave or not, Author doesn't make any indication in the raws or maybe I am just reading it wrong. [Read more here.](#)

[2] Figure eight descender is a commonly used equipment

[3] I'll be damned

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 35

## Chapter 35 – Trap?

“Had a nice rest or not?” I kicked Huang Shulang. He stood straight up, almost as if he were a spring. Indeed, well-trained.

“Yes, yes.” After undergoing the experience of falling through the cave’s entrance, Huang Shulang had seemingly become much more courageous. This courage was surely from training.

“Good, then we walk at once.” We turned on the lamps on the miner hats on our heads. I intended to use the flashlight within the school bag as a reserve. Certainly, I also lit a candle. If the oxygen were to be in deficit, the candle also wouldn’t remain lit.

The cave interior was very peaceful. Only the sound of the footsteps from Huang Shulang, Black Bean, and myself could be heard. Black Bean was still as audacious as ever; even inside the cave, he always liked to run in front. As far as he was concerned, everything was full of enjoyment.

We chased after the light, while the dark chased after us. Under the illumination of the flashlight, we could only see two colours in the cave: Black and White.

“Ma-Master, will there actually be any martial arts cheatbooks in this place?” Huang Shulang asked.

“You’re asking me, who would I go ask? In any case, I had earlier found a cheatbook at the main peak. Actually, whether it is here or not, I cannot guarantee. If you are afraid, you can go back now.” I said disgruntledly.

Huang Shulang promptly stuck to me and laughed: “Am not, am not. I was just asking. We have come so deep into the cave, how could we give up halfway?”

“Then talk a bit less rubbish. I don’t know what kinds of things might possibly be here; if you are noisy and attract these things over, then it would really be troublesome.” I said threateningly.

Huang Shulang promptly shrunk back his neck, and said while shaking his head: “I won’t speak, won’t speak.”

All along the way, I noticed that the cave was very new, it had probably been recently excavated. On the cave walls, signs of excavation could be seen. The cave that we were in now, was it possibly dug by those of the archaeology team? The people of the archaeology team had already disappeared without a trace. My question naturally had no answer.

Pu, Pu, Pu.

I suddenly heard sounds of footsteps other than our own, it clearly was the sound of somebody else. Seemed to be the sound of very heavy footsteps.

“Stop!” I stopped promptly. Huang Shulang didn’t react in time, and bumped into me. Although when it came to strength Huang Shulang was no match for me, when it came to bodyweight, I naturally could not compare to him. Therefore, when we bumped, Huang Shulang remained standing still, moving not even a whisker, while I flew out. By the time I managed to crawl up from the ground, the surroundings had already become quiet.

“What happened? Master.” Huang Shulang promptly pulled me up.

“Nevermind.” I, somewhat furiously, patted the dust from my clothes. I stood still, carefully listening for a moment, but couldn’t hear any sounds. So, I turned my head around to Huang Shulang and said, “When I want you to stop, you must stop immediately. Understand?”

“Understood.” Huang Shulang, seeing the serious expression on my face, clearly knew that the matter was important.

I secretly condensed, within my hand, my most powerful primordial qi 雷 (Lightning) character. I was prepared to strike out and vanquish the enemy at any time.

Huang Shulang's bodyweight was great; as he walked, the sound he made was also loud. The entire cave was flooded with the sound of Huang Shulang's footsteps.

“Softly!” I reminded Huang Shulang.

“Ai, ai.” Huang Shulang agreed, but when he walked, the sound was still just as loud.

When I detected the sound of footsteps again, the hair on Black Bean's body also stood erect as he barked at the pitch-dark cave.

“Wang, wang, wang, wang, wang, wang, wang, wang, wang.....”

Although I couldn't understand his barking, I was able to understand Black Bean's state of mind. It had detected a dangerous object. What kind of an object was this?

Huang Shulang reacted the slowest. Although he was gluttonous and cowardly, his reaction to danger was still the slowest. These sounds, did not frighten him easily.

I had already detected that there was something that was coveting us. What was it actually? Was it human? Was it a wild animal? Or was it something else?

“What did you just discover a moment ago?” When Huang Shulang gradually turned to look into the distance, his eyes narrowed into a thin line.

I unhappily said to Huang Shulang: “Walk.”

This stretch of newly dug tunnel was not wide; as the tunnel was getting more and more narrow, it was getting difficult to walk. Therefore, our speed of walking was extremely slow. We walked for more than ten minutes. Although we were frightened, there was no danger in the end.

Having walked through this newly dug tunnel, we arrived in a very ancient cave. Looking at the condition of the cave, it had also certainly been artificially constructed because, on the cave walls, there were artificially chiseled square bluestones. The stones in the cave

having undergone an unknown number of years, and have become covered by thick moss. I used my knife to cut away the moss to be able to look at the condition of the stones. This cave has been constructed with a grand scale. Even if Fatty and I were to jump, we wouldn't be able to reach the ceiling of the cave.

"Master, Master, we are rich! There is definitely some buried treasure here! We're rich!" Truly, human beings die in pursuit of wealth, and birds die in pursuit of food. Huang Shulang, in the thoughts of riches and valuables, had unexpectedly forgotten that so many people of the archaeology team had not made it out of the cave. Perhaps this place was not a secret treasure cave, but rather, it was a life-burying man-eating cave.

I found that I myself was not much better than Fatty, in order to fulfill that little bit of desire in my heart, I also dared to risk my life, and came into this cave.

Why did I want to take the risk of coming here? I already couldn't remember what my thoughts of that time were. The bronze medal on my chest had made me excessively confused at that time. Ignorant regarding cultivation, it made me want to ask someone. However, I couldn't find any person who would believe me, and who I could ask. When I bumped into Li Shaoqing, originally I had wanted to ask him whether it would be right or wrong. However, I had subconsciously rejected that person. I felt danger emanating from his body, making me do the utmost to avoid this person. Now that Li Shaoqing has probably died, I seek the clues to the answers to everything, in this cave. Therefore, I took the risk to come.

My biggest question still had not been answered. After all, what kind of a thing was in the place that had, all along, been attracting me – all along, been beckoning me during the night. As if there was something here that had been waiting for my arrival.

The bronze medal on my chest began throbbing slightly, just like a heartbeat.

Thump.....Thump.....

I was able to hear the sounds of a rhythmic heartbeat. Was it the thing that had been attracting me?

I finally came to know why I had been attracted to this place. Unexpectedly, it was because, all along, I had been wearing this bronze medal at my chest. This bronze medal had planted a Dao seed on my body. Although the seed had germinated, sprouting my Dao. However, my Dao is still unavoidably being affected by the bronze medal.

Was this bronze medal a trap? All of this, everything has been for this one day?

Seeing me standing still at the original place, Huang Shulang pushed me with his hand.

"Master, why did you stop? Did you discover something again?"

Only then did I come to my senses, it was not good to think too much. In any case, my immature brain could not think through so many issues. The best way was that, regardless of everything, we need to see what happened in the end. Having come here, without having a look at the cards in one's hand, who would be willing to resign.

Gold ingots had been flickering within Huang Shulang's two eyes, perhaps he was already fantasizing about the giant buried treasures awaiting him.

The cave didn't seem to have sustained any serious damage. Also, no signs of people fighting could be discovered. The issue that arises: Where did those people of the archaeology team go? What on earth did they actually meet in this cave? What dreadful thing does this place have inside?

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 36

## Chapter 36 – Ghost Pounding the Wall

“Master, I’m hungry.” Hadn’t even walked a few steps, when Huang Shulang’s stomach started growling.

I just found that my plan was somewhat inadequate. I didn’t account for Huang Shulang’s appetite. I gave him a packet of biscuits, which was immediately eaten clean in two-three bites.

“Would eating a bit less kill you?” Hearing Huang Shulang making crunching sounds while eating, made my heart somewhat itchy, so I turned my head around, only to see that a packet of biscuits being conveniently thrown to the ground. It made me angry to the point of death, I hadn’t eaten yet!

“I thought you didn’t like eating.” Fatty also tried to give some lame reasoning, I was disinclined to deal with him. If I had known earlier, bringing along Teacher Lin would have been better than this fatty. However, how could I make Teacher Lin let me go down?

“Move on!” I said clenching my teeth.

I didn’t know how long the tunnel was, the footprints on the ground were somewhat disorderly, some were coming back, some are going forward, it was impossible to distinguish where the person at that time was going. After nearly half an hour of walking, we still hadn’t reached the end. Only at this time, I discovered something amiss.

Black Bean came up to me, looking as if he was holding something on his mouth, and started whining. When I saw the thing that Black Bean was holding in his mouth, I nearly jumped out of my skin.

Unexpectedly, it was the biscuit packet that Huang Shulang had thrown to the ground. It’s impossible to get mistaken by it. When Huang Shulang had thrown the wrapper to the ground, I had also specifically shined the flashlight on it. Black Bean had been running ahead all this time, definitely didn’t have time to go back and get it. Now seeing this wrapper, the only reasonable explanation is that Huang Shulang and I had gone back while walking.

“Ghost! Ghost! Ghost!” Huang Shulang was trembling from head to toe, and finding it difficult to even speak.

“Ghost your damned head, we’re just going in circles.” I hit Huang Shulang’s head.

“It’s Ghost pounding the wall<sup>[1]</sup>. W-We walked all the way till now, we didn’t see any fork in the road.” Huang Shulang spoke very logically. While walking all along the way, I had been very carefully illuminating the cave walls, and definitely hadn’t discovered any fork

in the path.

“Don’t panic, want to lose face? This is just a little trifling matter, yet you’re still so afraid like that.” I took out two fruit knives from my backpack. These were my weapons that I had prepared to protect myself. From them, I handed over one to Huang Shulang, “Take it.”

Huang Shulang didn’t dare to take it: “Master, later won’t you make me go and fight with the ghost?”

“Coward. I, your father, just don’t want to let you march to your death. It is to let you slash out the knife along the way and make a notation on the roof. Moreover, also keep a look out and see which place in this tunnel is a bit unusual.” I said.

Huang Shulang took the knife, walked alongside me, and used the knife on one side of the cave wall while walking to make slashes.

This time, we’d walked for five-six minutes, when Black Bean walking in front suddenly stopped. Rushed towards the left side cave wall and began barking incessantly.

Black Bean had discovered something!

I promptly sped up my pace and ran over there. Huang Shulang promptly chased after: “Slow down a bit, I’m at my limit. Who knows this place doesn’t have any issues?”

I didn’t pay attention to Huang Shulang, because from the shouts of Black Bean, I could hear that Black Bean didn’t detect any danger, but rather had discovered some important clue.

Black Bean looked at me, and began barking wildly at the left side cave wall.

I also carefully looked at that cave wall, I couldn’t discover it having any apparent issues. While walking past the cave wall, I used my hand to touch it, trying to see if it had some kind of a mechanism.

It was this touch, that made me jump in fright, as my hand could only feel the air. This wall which seemingly didn’t appear to have any problems, was unexpectedly fake. There simply was no cave wall here, rather there was a cave.

“So it turns out here’s the problem!”

I went inside the cave, Huang Shulang who was walking behind me exclaimed suddenly.

“Master, Master, Where did you go?” Huang Shulang from his voice seemed to be panicking greatly.

I didn’t even have time to size up this new cave, and just moved back hastily.

It seemed as if I had suddenly appeared in front of Huang Shulang. Huang Shulang was extremely surprised: “Master, what had happened just a moment ago? Why did you disappear all of a sudden? Really frightened this disciple.”

“Come come, Huang Shulang touch this place with your hand.” I beckoned Huang Shulang.

Huang Shulang bewilderedly moved towards me.



“Touch this place on the wall and have a look.” I said smiling.

Huang Shulang was thinking of reaching out to climb the wall; resultantly, his hand only caught air. His body suddenly lost its center of gravity, and he directly fell down into the branch cave.

“Ah!” Huang Shulang let out a pitiful yell, “Master, there is a trick here!”

Huang Shulang from my perspective, appeared to have suddenly drilled straight into the wall.

A big live person suddenly vanishing in front of one’s eyes like this, was indeed mysterious. Only I quickly understood that the reason for this kind of thing in this place, was because I was able to detect the aura of Primordial Qi here. Primordial Qi had built a fake sign here, making it look very much like a cave wall, but it actually concealed the true branch cave. I also didn’t have any kind of experience in this field, naturally would end up deceived all of a sudden. If it were not for Black Bean’s initial discovery, I probably wouldn’t have been able to discover this problem.

I hastily drew an arrow on the ground, pointing towards the new cave. Under such circumstances, I naturally couldn’t help but be more careful.

“Master, Why haven’t you come in yet?” Huang Shulang, who was already inside, couldn’t help but yell out. I quickly went inside. Huang Shulang was constantly shining the flashlight on the walls of the cave.

“Conserve the electricity, we still don’t know how long we will end up staying here. If the electricity is used up, then at that time you wouldn’t be able to cry.” I warned.

Huang Shulang promptly turned off the flashlight, leaving only the light on the miner hat worn on the head. Since these hadn’t been used for a long time, left neglected on the mountains, and moreover had been possibly used by the archaeology team. Therefore, they’d already begun to darken, somewhat showing lack of use. It was also because of this, that I was somewhat worried, that once the electricity in the flashlight was all used up, Huang Shulang and I would end up in a state of complete darkness. In case we run into some danger, we would be in big trouble.

“Old way is better.” I said facing Huang Shulang.

Black Bean was quite intelligent, having made this discovery, it was also carefully noting the cave walls on both sides.

Sha Sha Sha

In the cave suddenly a “Sha Sha Sha” sound resounded.

“Stop!” I shouted promptly.

Huang Shulang’s heart jumped in fright, as he looked at me full of secret grievance.

“There’s a sound, listen carefully.” I said promptly.

“WangWang, WangWang, WangWang…….” [2]

Black Bean barked fiercely. It seems my intuition was correct, there is indeed something.

“You stand right here, don’t move. I’ll go and take a look.” I said to Huang Shulang.

“Better I go along with you.” Huang Shulang said hastily. He was afraid of being left alone. Although the thing making the sound might be very scary, staying in the same place was even more terrifying. If the situation was that of ‘moving the tiger from the mountain’, then he might as well be a block of fat meat.<sup>[3]</sup>

I also thought that Huang Shulang had become brave all of a sudden, “Ok, you walk ahead.”

The moment these words left my mouth, Huang Shulang almost knelt down to the ground, “Ma-Master, it’s better if you’ll be in front. I’ll bring up the rear.”

How could I not see through these sly thoughts of Huang Shulang? I Laughingly said: “Fatty, you are very intelligent.”

Huang Shulang didn’t dare to talk back, with his head drooping low, he didn’t dare look at me.

“WangWang, WangWang, WangWang.....”

Black Bean absolutely didn’t know the word “Fear”, as all along he remained the one ahead.

Suddenly, at that place a gray silhouette abruptly rushed towards us. I used the flashlight to look at it, unexpectedly, it was a big gray rat which had become as fat as cat.

Black Bean immediately came to intercept in front of my body. He had stopped barking, bending his body slightly, as if a stretched bow and arrow, with his eyes carefully watching the big rat drawing closer and closer.

The big rat panicked unexpectedly, couldn’t choose a path and kept rushing straight at us.

“My mother, how is this rat so big? Is he about to turn into a goblin?” Huang Shulang opened his eyes wide, somewhat inconceivably said.

The moment the big rat had almost reached our side, Black Bean moved. He looked almost like an arrow leaving its bow as he moved out, instantly arriving in front of the big gray rat, directly lifted his front legs, and thrashed out ferociously. The big rat was unable to dodge in time, flew out nearly ten-twenty feet. Heavily hit the cave wall, before falling down to the ground, tumbling continuously more than ten times, before stopping.

However, this big gray rat didn’t seem to have received a big injury. Managing to crawl up in piece, this time, it didn’t dare rush to our side, and instead escaped down the path from which it came.

“Aiya, I was scared to death. Such a big rat, probably must be several jin in weight.” Huang Shulang was still frightened.

“Shouldn’t be? Does a rat frighten you so much?” I said dissatisfied.

Huang Shulang ashamedly hung his head: “That rat was bigger than a cat. Also don’t know what thing it eats.”

Correct. This rat in this cave, what had it actually eaten? Unless, they were capable of going out.

“Black Bean, chase after that rat.” I promptly yelled at Black Bean.

Black Bean seemingly understood what I’d said, and quickly rushed out in pursuit.

“Follow quickly!” I said to Huang Shulang, and immediately moved in pursuit.

If we are able to find the exit point used by this rat, then Fatty and I would have an escape route. In case if we were to encounter any danger, we would be able to get out from this exit. What exactly had happened to the people of archaeology team that day? I still hadn’t managed to grasp any clues.<sup>[4]</sup> We came in through a big hole, how can we exit through an alley? These things were not of the greatest importance, for now, I must chase after that big rat, and firstly seek a way out for myself.

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 37

## Chapter 37 – Big Rat’s Backdoor

However, not even a few steps later, Huang Shulang ran out of breath: “I ca-can’t run any further. Even if I am killed, I’m too tired to move any further.”

Huang Shulang directly sat down into the ground, and no matter how many kicks I used, he wasn’t willing to get up. By now I had already determined the future direction of Huang Shulang’s training, but for now, far off water can’t solve near thirst. I sat down somewhat vexedly, I couldn’t really abandon this disciple.

“Damned fatty, you should lose weight. If we’re able to find the exit point of the big rat, then perhaps we might be able to find a shortcut out of this cave. ‘Twas very dangerous inside this cave. Didn’t the archaeology team have so many people, yet not even a single living person came out. We have come treasure hunting, it’s not going to come to our deaths. If we are able to find a safe exit point, then even if we’re not able to find any treasure, we would still be able to leave intact. If you want to die here, then you can just stay here not moving. The rat in this place is so big, then you tell me wouldn’t it also possibly have a python?” I knew that Huang Shulang’s greatest fear was snakes, therefore I deliberately said it like that. Who knew that even after I finished speaking, still.....

Huang Shulang sprung up from the ground: “Master, can you give me something to eat? As long as I eat, I will be able to run.”

“Don’t be anxious, wait until we catch that rat, I will roast that rat’s meat for you.” I promptly held on to my backpack with both hands.

This time Huang Shulang unexpectedly wasn’t in the mood to snatch my snacks. Upon hearing of the rat’s meat, and having barely eaten since morning, he said: “Don’t talk to me about rat meat, when I hear about rat meat, I feel like puking.”

I didn’t understand why Huang Shulang was so sensitive about rat meat, but I too was disinclined to ask for reason. What is most important at the moment is to chase after that rat, and seek out a path. Having been surviving in this cave up till now, that rat must definitely have a means of survival.

“Walk, walk. First find that rat, then talk.” I dragged Huang Shulang to walk.

Black Bean had been pursuing it nonstop for over a quarter of an hour. I was able to hear his continuous barking. Black Bean was very intelligent, he knew that by barking, he could guide the way for Huang Shulang and I to follow. However, very quickly Huang Shulang and I discovered that the guidance of the sound was not at all reliable. Because, soon after walking, we ran into a fork in the path. In the cave, when one makes a little sound, the sound would echo for a long time. Although Black Bean was using his barking

sound to give directions, we didn't have any way to find the correct path. Because, these paths were extending in all directions. There was a time, when we were able to hear Black Bean's barking coming from two paths.

Huang Shulang and I stopped at a fork. Having seen in television, these kind of caves often had traps. If we were not careful, then it could take our little lives right here. We were here to treasure hunt, not to kill ourselves. How could I, as a soon to be century-spanning Daoist with such bright prospects, throw away my life in this kind of dark cave?

"Miserable, miserable. We can't walk out. The terrain here is so complex. I have absolutely forgotten where we came from." Huang Shulang said with a sullen face.

"What is there to be anxious about? We can't find Black Bean, but Black Bean can definitely find us." I said.

I shouted loudly: "Black Bean, come back quickly!"

My voice kept reverberating in the cave. However, even after a while, there was no trace of Black Bean. Only occasionally, one could hear Black Bean's voice still echoing out as before.

"You see, you see, Black Bean's voice is getting farther and farther away. He might also not remember the paths he walked past, maybe even some paths have been trodden repeatedly. As the matter stands, there is no way to find a way out." Huang Shulang said gloomily.

"Cut the crap, didn't you run out of breath after running, why did Black Bean and us got separated?" I reproached Huang Shulang.

Huang Shulang also felt wronged: "I really couldn't walk any more. You want me to run so fast, how can I run like that? It was you who brought me along here, if I lose my life, I will blame you."

"When did I want someone to become my disciple? Someone brazen-faced and shameless wanted to become my disciple, yet now he has gone back on his word, whether belatedly somewhat?" I said looking very gloomy.

At the time the two of us were quarrelling, Black Bean came running and began rubbing his head against my leg.

"Black Bean, you are an upright dog. Compared to some people, you are much stronger." I deliberately mocked Huang Shulang.

Huang Shulang was feeling somewhat embarrassed, in his argument with me a moment ago, he had spoken somewhat excessively.

I was still angry at Huang Shulang. Who said that a person of cultivation couldn't be angry? People of cultivation must be even more narrow-minded than an average person. Who made me, not even a 10 year old, a Daoist?

Huang Shulang had thick skin and tried to speak well of me, with the intent of making me laugh. He was worried that I would abandon him here, and therefore, he was very rational and didn't want to offend me.

"Black Bean, you found that rat's point of exit? Lead us there." I said.

Black Bean hopped and jumped around first, then quickly started running.

“Damned fatty, this time you must keep up. If you are unable to keep up, then you can remain here alone.” I warned loudly.

“Ai ai, I know.” Fatty’s demeanor was unusually good. Even though it got somewhat strenuous while walking, Huang Shulang persevered. However, what made me baffled was that the path taken by Black Bean didn’t circle towards the outside, seemingly continuing to walk towards an even more central place.

Following after Black Bean, Huang Shulang and I had already passed through several crossings. At this time, the residual vestiges on the ground were getting more and more distinct.

“These places are perhaps the places where the people of the archaeology department once were.” I silently thought in my heart.

There were also some remnant ceramic fragments on the ground. Upon careful inspection, I unexpectedly found some bullet shells inside them. The key above it, used by soldiers returning to the village for hanging the bullet shells, was exactly one and the same.

Huang Shulang was a thoughtless fellow, upon seeing the bullet shells, his eyes began shining, and very quickly he picked them up and put them into his pocket. Looking at him, I only thought of kicking him with both legs. This time he had unexpectedly even picked bullet shells. What was the worst of all was that he actually picked them all up, leaving not even one for me.

I used the flashlight to look, but didn’t see any other bullet shells, also there wasn’t really anything else of value. However, I suddenly discovered that there was some scarlet coloured thing on the wall. Approaching closer to look, only to discover that this aforementioned thing that I had just discovered was bloodstains. Actually what kind of a bitter event had occurred here, were these bloodstains from those people of the archaeology team who had remained here?

Black Bean barked out again twice, seemingly urging Huang Shulang and I to get a move on.

“Walk!” I shouted at Huang Shulang who was contentedly toying with the bullet shells.

Huang Shulang quickly followed, the bullet shells making melodious collision noises in his bag.

I frowned, cannot lose face fighting with my disciple over bullet shells. Moreover, Fatty has been very cautious towards me since the beginning.

“Hou!” Black Bean suddenly let out a roar. My hair stood completely erect all of a sudden. Clearly, he had discovered something that made him feel danger.

“Walk quickly!” I also had some premonitions. An extremely strong sense of crisis was making me feel scared.

Black Bean didn’t insist, quickly caught up, however the noises behind quickly became louder. It was as if a train was passing through a tunnel, roaring and rumbling.

Black Bean ran up to the front, not because he feared death, but rather because he had to

guide us.

“I-I am too tired to move further.” Huang Shulang said puffing and blowing.

“I am not scaring you, but there is a big fellow that is coming from behind chasing after us. It’s very fierce. Black Bean has never bumped into anything that made him feel fear, but with this thing, Black Bean is already feeling threatened. If you don’t fear death, you can wait here for it. In any case, you are so fat, perhaps after eating you, it might feel full, and I would remain safe.” I could only scare Huang Shulang.

Huang Shulang’s instincts then erupted, all of a sudden, his thick fat contained immense energy. Unexpectedly, in a short while, he actually surpassed me.

“Bastard!” I promptly chased after.

Black Bean led us to a stone chamber, which was quite spacious. Although the years had washed away its former glory, from the looks of the outlines, one could see that originally, this place was not ordinary. In the middle of the stone chamber, there was a coffin.

Black Bean shouted at the coffin a few times. Then using only his two forelegs, put them on the top of the coffin and kept trying to push.

“Won’t do. Don’t tell me that big rat is hiding in that coffin?” Huang Shulang mumbled.

“Who knows? We won’t know until we push it open to look.” I said.

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 38

## Chapter 38 – Escape

Huang Shulang and I pushed hard, but how could it be pushed anywhere? One must know that Fatty and I were first graders, even though Fatty's body looked very big, it was useless, his body was completely full of fat. Although my strength in comparison to other children is much greater, even an adult also would not necessarily be able to move this thick coffin easily.

“Master, you're not going to use magic? You know that by using magic, we can take away this thing; otherwise, we are done for!” Not even a short while later, Huang Shulang was already gasping for breath. Sitting down on the ground, he wasn't willing to move.

“Roar! Wang ,wang, wang ,wang.....” Black Bean again turned towards outside and began howling loudly. Obviously, the thing that had been chasing us all along, had unexpectedly caught up in pursuit. I didn't know how many detours we had taken, but unexpectedly, we still hadn't been able to throw off this thing.

Nothing could be done about it now, I could only use Huang Shulang's method. I wrote high in the sky the 风 (Wind) character, and then threw the 风 character onto the coffin directly.

“Hong!”

The coffin which all along hadn't moved even a single inch, unexpectedly immediately began moving. With a very fast speed, it directly hit against the wall. Sure enough, there was a cave hidden beneath the coffin, but this cave wasn't too big, 'twas only big enough for a child to crawl through.

“Black Bean! Lead the way!” I said promptly.

Black Bean very obediently immediately went into the hole.

Fortunately we were children. Although Huang Shulang was fat, even him, when compared to an adult, was not that big. Moreover even though the opening of this cave wasn't too big, its inner dimensions were more spacious. Also, Huang Shulang and I had short and small builds, aside from Fatty, who was slightly stuck while getting into the cave, requiring my effort to pull him. We both got through the opening in the dark cave, falling one-two meters straight into the darkness below.

“Roar!”

When Huang Shulang fell down from the surface, atop the cave opening, suddenly a loud roar of a wild beast resounded.



A giant python head appeared at the cave opening.

“Faster!” Huang Shulang and I promptly began crawling flusteredly, moving forward very quickly.

Hong!

Just after we had run away, the huge python head violently started hitting the cave opening. Stone dust began falling down from above, making “hua la hua la” sounds.

The space in this dark cave was quite big, I was afraid that this python could also drill through it.

I promptly used the knife in my hand to dig a hole in the ground, then, with the knife’s edge facing up, filled the hole. After which I used the soil and gravel to fix the knife.

After that, I turned back to look, that python had already drilled through the hole and was quickly catching up. The speed of that python was fast, here at the moment in this stretch of road, Huang Shulang and I wouldn’t be able to outrun it.

I was able to react resourcefully during emergencies, and promptly condensed a Primordial Qi 火 (Fire) character, and directly threw it back without even turning my head.

The Primordial Qi 火 character suddenly exploded, turning into a ball of raging flame, dashing directly towards that python. This strange phenomenon of fire emerging, how could the python guard against it? The python was naturally directly enveloped by the flame. The fire formed from the Primordial Qi was unlike any normal fire. It depended on Primordial Qi for support, and unless the Primordial Qi was exhausted, it couldn’t be extinguished under any circumstances. And all inflammable items that comes contact with Primordial Qi fire immediately catches on fire.

That python’s body was naturally inflammable, and coming into contact with the fire made of Primordial Qi, it immediately began burning. It was similar to what happens when gasoline-like inflammable objects meet a fire spark. Immediately, raging flames erupted.

“Roar!”

The python let out a painful howl. This kind of burning while alive, was making it somewhat hard to bear for the python.

I saw that the Primordial Qi seals had a pretty good effect, so I made a Primordial Qi 雷 (Thunder) character, then prepared a Primordial Qi 风 (Wind) character, and threw it out together with the 雷 character. No matter what would happen, we just kept moving forward.

When the 火 character had erupted a moment ago, it generated a lot of energy on the python in the cave, but at the same time, it also completely burnt through the oxygen in the cave. While I was moving forward, I could feel the scathing heat behind me, but at the same time there was a feeling of suffocation.

The python suffered a great loss, going wild with rage, it would naturally retaliate even at the cost of its life. However, very quickly a tragedy struck it. A formidable thunder and

lightning appeared in front of it.

“Roar!”

I was able to hear the python’s lamenting howls which were like music to my ears. The python had already suffered a great loss, but again it had to suffer through thunder and lightning, it was quite obvious. Although my skills were limited, this python’s ability also couldn’t go against the heavens. Thunder and lightning directly struck its brain. Although it’s body was huge and it had almost limitless strength, its divine sense was extremely weak. Although Primordial Qi fire was able to damage the python, it wasn’t able to actually seriously injure it. However, the Primordial Qi thunder actually wanted its life.

The roars of the python were getting nearer and nearer, but I could actually hear its laments getting weaker and weaker. I could hear the wind making whistling sounds as it chased after me. As far as a python as big as this was concerned, Huang Shulang and I were far too weak. If it manages to overtake us, then it would be difficult for us to escape from disaster.

“Dead, dead! Big python has almost caught up!” Huang Shulang, who was originally too tired to even move a bit, seeing that the scorched black python behind was coming nearer, simply sat on the ground, unwilling to move again.

“What time do you think it is? You are still lying on the ground? Stand up quickly! We have to leave from here!” I pulled at Huang Shulang, but couldn’t make him stand up.

“In any case, if we run we will die, if we don’t run then we also die. I might as well sit down and rest.” Huang Shulang was continuously gasping for breath, that sort of feeling weakness born from lack of oxygen was somewhat hard to bear for a person.

Also it wasn’t that I didn’t want to continue attacking the python with Primordial Qi characters, but rather using these few characters just a moment ago had completely used up all the Primordial Qi reserves within my body.

I wanted to pull Fatty up to stand, but he actually didn’t even move. I also couldn’t abandon him to escape. So I could only stand still, maintaining a state of alertness, while desperately gathering Primordial Qi. Preparing to once again condense a Primordial Qi seal to attack the python.

Suddenly, the python pounced at us, the python’s head came heavily smashing at Huang Shulang and I.

“Hong!”

As the huge python head came heavily smashing at us, it caused intense wind to blow up the dust on the ground, making Fatty and I eat mouthfuls of dirt.

Originally, Fatty and I had already closed our eyes waiting for death, but for a long time there was no sound at all.

I opened my eyes and astonishingly discovered that unexpectedly, this python actually had no breath left in it. It had unexpectedly died!

Fatty and I kept panting for breath for a while, then opened both our eyes wide, and began laughing with “ha ha ha” sounds.

Fatty with great effort managed to pull himself up from the ground, and thoughtlessly laughing out loud, he said: "We are indeed very lucky."

"Lucky? Master was almost killed because of you!" I annoyedly stared at Huang Shulang.

"Master, why didn't you run away by yourself just a moment ago? With me acting as impediment, you could surely have escaped." Huang Shulang seemed to be knowledgeable about good and evil.

"Foot cramp, I was too tired to move any further." How could I, a century spanning Daoist, display weakness in front of my disciple? Therefore, I stood up and kicked Huang Shulang. "Stand up quickly. I don't want to beat you."

Huang Shulang smiling with "hei hei" sounds, stood up, "Master, this big snake has been roasted to ripeness. Such a big snake, its meat would surely be nice, how about we go and roast its meat a bit?"

"You go eat. I suspect that those people from the archaeology team have already entered this fellow's belly, perhaps you could also taste a bit of their flavour in its meat." I snorted coldly.

"Wa, Tu." Huang Shulang all of sudden completely vomited out the snacks of mine that he had eaten while starting off.

I was disinclined to pay any further attention to Huang Shulang, and very quickly began running forward. I wanted to know very much where exactly this dark cave led to.

After Huang Shulang had finished vomiting, it seemed as if his strength was restored. He glanced at the python with his eyes open wide, and then hurriedly stood up, to chase after me while making slamming sounds.

"Ma-Master, slow down, slow down, nothing is chasing us anymore, why are you running so fast? The python has been eliminated by us now. Wouldn't it be better for us to go back to the cave and have a look at the treasures?" Huang Shulang was running and catching up.

I was disinclined to be wordy with Huang Shulang, this fellow's courage was too small, while the greed in his heart was too huge. Black Bean would from time to time turn his head to bark a few times, urging us to catch up a bit faster.

After running for ten or more minutes, we finally managed to see light up ahead. From the outside, rumbling sounds were also coming in.

Exactly what is it?

Bearing this question, I continued running forward fast. While running, I was able to slowly discover moisture in the air.

Black Bean stopped, and barked a few times while facing outside.

I also stopped, having already run to the cave's exit point. Only now did I discover that the cave's exit point was unexpectedly located behind Ba Jiao Mountain's waterfall. The exit of this cave was also a work of wonder, although it was hidden behind the waterfall, it was located on the cliff in midair, coupled with the fact that the exit was sloped. Even if the water were to splash inside the hole, it would flow out. There is no need to worry about

river water flowing backwards.

“Heh heh, so it turns out to be here. Who would be capable of thinking that on the precipice behind the waterfall, a Water Curtain Cave is actually hidden. However, how do we get down?” Huang Shulang frowned while looking at the waterfall.

This waterfall was perennial, even in the low water level period of winter season, although the water here would reduce, it wouldn’t dry up. This was also the reason why this cave was not discovered.

“It’s not that high, if we jump, we won’t die.” I said while looking downwards. The precipice was very precipitous, without a rope, rock climbing it would be very difficult for us two first graders. Especially for Huang Shulang. With that physique of his, going rock climbing, he might as well just go jump down directly.

Huang Shulang cowardly extended his head to look downwards, before promptly backing up a few steps: “Too high. If there are rocks below the water, we would end miserably.”

“From where would rocks come here? I anyways won’t drown here.” I said.

“Why do we have to depart like this?” Huang Shulang not reconciled to it, looked towards the direction of the cave.

“I am already out of power. If there is anything else inside that is even fiercer than the python, we won’t again have the opportunity to escape. In any case, we know about this secret cave. Later, we’ll come again with ample preparation. Moreover, it’s already late, if we’re not back soon, our families will definitely get chaotic.” Whether or not we want to return, by lunch time, our families would definitely send people to search. Perhaps even the matter of coming to Ba Jiao Mountain Main Peak would be exposed. Therefore, I was already unwilling to take that risk. Despite not having even seen the most dangerous place of this cave, just this python alone had nearly taken the lives of two people. Once we encounter danger, both of us would have absolutely no chance of living. Fortunately, today we discovered this secret path. Otherwise, it was uncertain how today would have ended.

I already had thoughts of retreating in my mind. Moreover, having experienced the risks this time, I also understood a lot of things. I had my own Dao. Where is the need to go learn other people’s Dao? Me persevering in continuing to come here, could possibly even be a devil in my heart.

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 39

## Chapter 39 – Bamboo Shoots Fried Meat

“Fatty look, there’s a wild boar taking a bath in the pool.” I said loudly while pointing at the pool.

“Where, where?” Huang Shulang promptly ran over, extending his head to look at the pool.

I promptly kicked Huang Shulang’s buttocks.

Huang Shulang directly fell down just like a pig.

“You deceived me, Master! Ah!”

“Bang!”

The water splashed really high. I didn’t worry about Huang Shulang drowning to death. After the 90s, it was rare to see anyone in the rural area who couldn’t swim. Moreover, there was a river not far from the Ba Jiao Village. In the village, it was rare to find any man or woman who was unable to swim. Huang Shulang is also said to have, on multiple occasions, gone hiding behind the river reef and peep at the village women taking bath.

The water in the pool was not shallow, it was more than ten feet deep. Huang Shulang had finally floated up after a bit.

Huang Shulang spat out a mouthful of water, then blurted out: “Master, master, you don’t want to teach me martial arts, but you still shouldn’t dispose of me. I know that you cherish Teacher Lin as a woman. I haven’t gone to peep at Teacher Lin while bathing.”

This bastard! I picked up a large stone, and furiously threw it down. Landing heavily in the water about two meters away from Huang Shulang, causing water to splash really high, just like a bomb. Huang Shulang jumped in fright, and quickly began swimming towards the pool’s edge.

I originally also wanted to jump down, but after falling into the water, I was afraid that my whole body would be soaked just like Huang Shulang. In the bag there were still a lot of snacks. The newly bought flashlight would also become useless. This ‘getting soaked into the water’ would only be a foolish endeavour.

I was able to use the Primordial Qi 风 (Wind) character to push away the coffin, could I also possibly use the Primordial Qi 风 character to bring me down?

With this thought, I immediately condensed a Primordial Qi 风 character. Having rested here for a long time, my Primordial Qi had already been replenished slightly. Just enough to condense a Primordial Qi 风 character. I took Black Bean into my hands, and moving

with a thought, that Primordial Qi 炁 character turned into a small scale tornado that immediately enveloped me. A feeling immediately emerged in my body, I was unexpectedly flying!

The most important thing was that this tornado was seemingly capable of understanding my thoughts. Slowly sweeping me away of the waterfall side, then flowing over the pool, till it finally slowly descended. By the time of landing, my Primordial Qi had been completely used up. The tornado losing control, immediately turned into a wind that flew towards the forest. However, Black Bean and I immediately fell down from the sky. Pressing down heavily on Huang Shulang, who had just now managed to climb onto the shore.

Huang Shulang had managed to come ashore, while ashore, he was panting incessantly. Being pressed down by me like this, he had only just barely managed to not die.

“Demon!” Huang Shulang naturally didn’t expect that I could use this type of domineering method to come down, he was frightened half-dead, and immediately pissed himself out of fright.

I didn’t continue sitting on him, and rolled aside onto the ground, as Black Bean in my hands also rolled out, whining a few times, showing his extreme discontent towards me.

“Who did you call demon, eh? Get up quickly, it’s already late, we should return quickly. Black Bean, you go tell Old Yellow to come down, we’ll go back.” I instructed Black Bean, who then took to his heels and ran.

Huang Shulang opened his eyes wide to look at Black Bean scrambling away, envying him very much.

“Master, when will it be time for me to get such a good dog.” Huang Shulang stood up scrambling, took off his clothes, forcefully wrung out the water, and finally put on the inner vest and underwear in his hands. The skin on his body was extremely white. He looked like an upright walking pig.

“No problem, if you perform well, perhaps I may consider.” I said after thinking for a bit.

“Master, this time, what rare books did we find, later what martial arts will I train in?” Huang Shulang further asked.

This was a problem. There was no way by which I could teach my Dao to this blockhead. I, myself, have still yet to completely unravel its intricacies, how could I teach Huang Shulang? However, I recalled Xing Yi Five Fists, since Xing Yi Five Fists was too difficult, I could try to find a kung fu that was not that difficult, to teach him.

“Don’t worry, as your Teacher, I have the means.” I said in a tv scholar-like accent.

Huang Shulang also became very happy, nodding his head, then bent: “Later, I will cut a jin of pig head meat from our house and deliver it to Master’s house.”

Your mother! I wish I could kick Huang Shulang back into the pool. My exceptional kung fu was only worth one jin of pig head meat? What is even the value of a jin of pig head meat?

After returning to our courtyard, Teacher Lin immediately came out to greet us: “Huang

Jingyang, did you pick up the mushrooms?"

Mushrooms! This important issue was unexpectedly forgotten.

"Don't talk about it. This damned fatty, while carrying the basket, rolled and fell into the pool. Thus, all the mushrooms fell into the pool." I became somewhat afraid upon seeing Teacher Lin. A child with a guilty conscience was like this.

Teacher Lin smiled sweetly: "Huang Jingyang, you've forgotten that whenever you lie you always look in all directions."

I knew it! I just knew that I wouldn't be able to deceive this astute and beautiful woman. I could only droop my head low, and adorn a face of sincerity.

"Huang Jingyang, hurry up and put away your trickery. Otherwise, tonight I will fry meat with bamboo shoots." Teacher Lin said threateningly.

This intelligent woman studies everything very quickly, even learning our village's speciality dish bamboo shoots fried meat. This bamboo shoots fried meat is not like any other bamboo shoots fried meat. When village children do something wrong, the parents are most fond of using moso bamboo branches to teach a lesson. After the leaves fall down from the bamboo branch, it can be used for making a broom, they can even be used for teaching lessons to children. The slender branches are extremely painful when whipped, but the wound wouldn't reach the bones, and also wouldn't damage the skin. No need to worry about any residual effects. Moreover, the material is cheap and could be seen everywhere. The village children all grew up eating bamboo shoots fried meat.

"Teacher Lin, now that the bamboo shoots have all turned into bamboo. How could we still be able to eat the sprouts?" I said while keeping a smile on my face.

"Heng! It seems that someone won't shed tears until he sees the coffin. You say that you go out to play, just go out to play. You also deceived me about going to to pick mushrooms. The worst part is that you had originally agreed to take me along. You unexpectedly abandoned me. See if I don't tidy you up nicely to the point of death today." Teacher Lin said as she picked me up.

I, Huang Jingyang, was unexpectedly picked up by a woman. Do children have no human rights?

I steeled my heart, and with a voice full of righteousness shouted out: "Grandpa, Help!"

The world of adults was not something that I, a child cultivator, could understand. Grandpa, who had always been treating me like a treasured object, was unexpectedly taking the side of the evildoer: "Teacher Lin, you must not use your hands to hit, our peasant family's children have thick skin, it would only hurt your hand if you hit them. Behind the main entrance, is my bamboo which I used to set off fireworks. Strike with all your might."

Good. I finally understood, upon returning from picking.

I suddenly felt a chill in my buttocks, Teacher Lin had unexpectedly taken off my pants. A gentleman should die before disgrace, if it were not for the fact that I saw here as a woman, I would have become impolite quite early. However, don't think that just because

she is a woman, I don't have any means.

I turned to see Teacher Lin raise the bamboo strip high, and immediately let out a yell.

"Aiyo Mama. I'm dying from pain."

Teacher Lin let out a giggle: "Huang Jingyang, your shout is a bit premature. My stick has yet to come down."

You think I am a fool? When the stick has yet to fall, what use is shouting?

"Pa!"

"Aiyo Mama. Teacher Lin, you really hit me?" This time was really painful. It seems like this time I really offended her.

"You still thought that I was just doing it for appearances? Huang Jingyang, you be honest with me, where exactly did you go today? I heard the kiosk owner saying that you bought a flashlight in there the day before yesterday, and also bought a packet of biscuits. You left when the dawn broke today, holding a flashlight, why? You have so much dirt on yourself, and so much moss. You tell me, where exactly did you go?" Is it not said that people with less hair are more intelligent? A beautiful woman having such long hair, being so intelligent, is it really fair?

How could I admit fear in front of this woman, I would rather be beaten to death than concede.

"I went to the pool to go take a bath over there. The pool over there has a cave, heard that there were fish inside. So I brought along a flashlight."

"Pa!"

Hit again on the buttocks, making me feel a burning sensation, in my heart I paid respects to the many great ancestors of the house of the person who had invented the use of bamboo sticks to hit people.

"You actually still dare to deceive me. You don't speak, but do you think that Huang Shulang also won't speak? Today, I told Huang Shulang's parents, and we decided that when you both come back, we would immediately hold a joint meeting. When Huang Shulang confesses later, you will suffer double the beating."

Teacher Lin didn't leave me any escape route. I continued to remain silent.

"I know that you went to the Ba Jiao Mountain Main Peak! I just want to hear you speak the truth yourself. Today, how should I give you a lesson." Teacher Lin again heavily whipped down on my body several times.

I didn't shout. Because I could hear Teacher Lin's voice trembling slightly. I turned my head to see that Teacher Lin's eyes had become red. She was worried about me. Even though I was young, I was still able to feel the warmth of care.

Teacher Lin dropped the bamboo stick in her hands, and pulling up my pants said: "Huang Jingyang, I am telling you, if you dare to go to the Ba Jiao Mountain Main Peak again, I will break your legs."

Having this time's experience, I also didn't want to go over there and take risks.



“Teacher Lin, I guarantee I won’t go.” I drooped my head, and naively laid down on the Teacher Lin’s legs. I unexpectedly fell asleep like that on a woman’s leg. Today was not only thrilling, but also exhausting. Although there was still some burning pain on the buttocks, I was able to sleep soundly.

By the time of waking up, it was already night. Grandpa had just placed the vegetables in the boiler for heating, by the time of eating, it would be steaming hot.

“This child, Teacher Lin had gone to the kiosk to do some shopping, only to come to know that you bought a flashlight. She immediately suspected that you had gone to the Ba Jiao Mountain Main Peak. There are a lot of dangers don’t you know? So many people of archaeology team went there, but nobody came out alive. You and Fatty were really lucky. If you didn’t come out, what would I have done?” Grandpa puffed on his pipe, and didn’t speak for a long time.

I didn’t tell Grandpa and Teacher Lin about the matters of the cave, they also didn’t ask. This thing just like this passed slowly. Henceforth, I became more clever. Giving off the impression of an ordinary child.

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 40

## Chapter 40 – Primordial Qi Can Treat Illnesses

“YangYang, you should also give Eldest Grandpa a foot massage, just like Grandpa, he has a bit of rheumatism.” The rheumatism in my Grandpa’s body had been completely treated, the villagers were all really baffled. Grandpa also didn’t tell others. Eldest Grandpa was his own blood brother. When Eldest Grandpa’s rheumatism flares up, it becomes really painful to walk. Grandpa couldn’t help but speak out the truth.

Grandpa led Eldest Grandpa to our house, and after entering from the main gate, called out for me while I was doing my school assignments.

I could only put down my school assignment book, and glance at Teacher Lin.

“Go. You can complete it after you come back.” Teacher Lin, who was marking school assignments at one side, stopped and said while turning towards me.

I went out from the room, Eldest Grandpa and Grandpa were sitting in the main room. Seeing me come out, Eldest Grandpa immediately stood up, but his legs and feet were inconvenient, as he stood trembling.

“YangYang, Eldest Grandpa has brought some candy for you. They’re on the table.” Eldest Grandpa said, pointing at some candies packed in red plastic wrappers placed on the square table for eight. Only, these candies didn’t hold that much of attraction to me. I am Huang Jingyang, when it came to eating candy, I must first see which brand it was. My Thirteenth Uncle gave me White Rabbit candy<sup>[1]</sup>, which was still passably good.

Grandpa immediately came to the point: “Your Grandpa’s rheumatism has flared up, it is totally inconvenient walking with this foot. You check him. See if you are able to treat Eldest Grandpa’s legs.”

Grandpa actually didn’t know exactly how I cured his legs. However, he knew that it definitely must be related to those leg massages of mine. Now, not only is his rheumatism fine, but the chronic illnesses of his entire body seem to have become completely fine overnight. How could he still possibly remain unaware that it was related to those massages that I gave him frequently.

From childhood, I have been viewed as a carrier of diseases. Everyone evaded me, treating me indifferently. Towards these villagers, I absolutely didn’t have any favourable impressions. What business is it of mine whatever matters they have? However, Grandpa often told me to be nice to others, Teacher Lin has told me to return good for evil. These two people were the ones I cared about the most in this life of mine. Compared to my parents, even more still. I want to follow their words. That time when the villagers had met with mishap after picking up the relics, it was also because of Grandpa’s directives,

that I helped deal with other people's issues.

I congealed Primordial Qi in my hand, and moved it on Eldest Grandpa's leg slowly. The Primordial Qi permeated slowly into Eldest Grandpa's body. The average person would be unable to see the faint traces of black qi coming elegantly out of Eldest Grandpa's leg. Dispersing out in the air, merging into nothingness.

As my hand moved, Eldest Grandpa's tightly furrowed eyebrows slowly relaxed, that awful ache was already slowly being eliminated.

I withdrew the Primordial Qi, stood up, and went to wash my hands. When I returned to the room, I heard Eldest Grandpa joyfully talking with Grandpa in the mainroom: "Ming Gui, my leg seems to no longer be aching. I have taken so many injections, taken so many medications, but they were not the least bit effective. YangYang merely pressed down, and all of a sudden it became better."

Grandpa was seemingly not at all surprised: "Good. Later, when you are free come again a few times."

"En." Eldest Grandpa said.

"Elder Brother. These candies that you brought, YangYang doesn't like eating these candies.

"What can I do? Should I go and bring back something else? Won't do, this illness was cured, cannot be considered gratuitous treatment. Later, I will give YangYang a thank-you gift."

"Elder Brother, we are all family. No need."

"No need? This is treating illnesses. Curing an illness but not even receiving a thank-you gift, do you want me to relapse?"

Teacher Lin was also baffled: "Huang Jingyang, did you really cure the illness?"

Earlier, Teacher Lin had been listening secretly all along.

"Yes. My Grandpa's rheumatism was also cured by me." I said.

"Cured how? You only massaged?" Teacher Lin naturally also couldn't understand.

"Right." I spoke vaguely as well.

"Then you have to also massage Teacher Lin. Marking so many assignments, my neck has gone sore." Teacher Lin rubbed her neck.

"No problem." I congealed Primordial Qi into my hand, and discharged it continuously into Teacher Lin's neck.

Teacher Lin immediately said joyously: "Hey, it's really effective. My neck has become quite relaxed all of a sudden. Huang Jingyang, I really couldn't discover that you had so many small secrets. Right, I earlier used to frequently catch colds. After coming to Ba Jiao Elementary School, I haven't ever caught cold. Did you take advantage of Teacher Lin while sleeping, secretly massaging Teacher, eh?"

Teacher Lin's complexion became slightly red after she spoke, as she looked at me full of

profound intent.<sup>[2]</sup>

“Teacher Lin, I fall asleep at night, I don’t know anything.” I was young, and didn’t understand Teacher Lin’s words.

Grandpa didn’t want to tell others the matter of me being able to cure rheumatism, he was most afraid of other people seeing me in a bad light. However, after Eldest Grandpa’s leg was cured, there were no means left to guard this secret.

Eldest Grandpa was the village’s famous loudmouth. Whatever matter happened to him here, would immediately be broadcasted into the knowledge of the entire village. Because of the matter of the red packet, I had a very good impression of Eldest Grandpa. Eldest Grandpa, after going back, sent me a red packet. Inside it were 200 yuan. Grandpa this time didn’t take away the money, and instead made me accept them myself. Earlier, Teacher Lin had given me an iron chocolate box. I placed the money in that iron box. This was the most money I had obtained since birth.

The people in the village would frequently walk barefooted on the ground. Moreover, Grandpa’s generation had once walked barefooted on frozen ground. Over time, one would naturally end with incompletely cured illnesses. Like Grandpa, those elderly of same age, would more or less have all kinds of chronic illnesses.

Earlier, whenever rheumatism flared up, the pain would be intolerable, then they would go to the barefoot doctor<sup>[3]</sup> in the village, who would use needles to relieve pain. The effects were not that good, moreover it would only remain effective for a short period of time. Hearing that Eldest Grandpa had gotten his rheumatism cured here, they all came running to our house. This time, each and everyone recalled how good I was, spoke so nicely as if the celestial constellations had descended to the earth. However, before this, amongst the village populace, I was seen as an evil portent. Whoever came into contact, would experience bad luck. Amongst the village children, nobody dared to speak even a few words to me. This time, I had become a lucky star. Truly, times change, things change.

“They are all people of the village, they had their reasons for avoiding. Although they used to not like us, they are of our own village, they all came seeking appointment, how could Grandpa be able to drive them away?” Grandpa seeing me unhappy, was somewhat worried.

Teacher Lin came to the village more than half a year ago, and was exceptionally clear regarding these circumstances: “Huang Jingyang, regarding this matter, Teacher won’t say anything, you yourself decide. Regardless of whether you decide to treat the villagers or not Teacher will always support you.”

I glanced at Teacher Lin, with my red eyes. Teacher Lin stroked my head gently, she also knew about the sadness in my heart. The villagers perhaps due to superstition sought advantages and avoided disadvantages, whether intentionally or unintentionally, they hurt me. Now they, owing to wanting to avoid disadvantages and seek advantage, gave to me another kind of injury. They never considered the feelings of this eight year old child.

“I shall take money.”

I thought for a long time, and the answer I gave made Teacher Lin laugh gently, and

heavily hit my butt.

“You just rigidly ask for money.”

Grandpa told villagers about my demand. The villagers were either silent, felt indignant, or approved. Although, earlier it was an ancient tradition that people of the village must help each other, in actuality, in the 90s, this kind of tradition was already starting to erode. All the young people in the village go to Guangdong to take up jobs, leaving behind only the weak, sick and disabled. Earlier the people in the village at the time of threshing, would ask for other's help as favour. So long as they were received with meals, it was ok. However, now they would demand wages even before beginning the work. Grandpa and I were growing a several mu field. At harvest time, asked for helpers, even willing to pay wages. However, our family was busy, many people were not willing to help. Now, on the contrary, some people want to profit out of gratuity from my work.

Actually, even if I were to not put it out explicitly, many people would just like Eldest Grandpa, give me gift of money. Considering as equal to the cost of treatment. However, explicitly asking for money has led to somewhat offending some people. Because this showed that there was no feeling of comradeship between villagers having the same home-town. Only, these arguments were completely non-applicable on me. Moreover, I was a first grader.

The fees for treating one was set at 200, the amount given by Eldest Grandpa became the norm. In the village of several hundred people, the old people numbered more than a hundred. After only a dozen or so people, I had earned more than 2000. As ten yuan made up one zhang, the chocolate box given by Teacher Lin was quickly filled up.

“Rotten brat, you are earning much more than me.” Teacher Lin looking at me counting, and couldn't help but complain. She made about a thousand per month. I, not having completed even one month, have earned more than two thousand. How could she endure a brat earning money much quicker than her?

I let out a laugh, I was a person of cultivation, money was a mere worldly possession, how could I get attached to it? At least ten thousand would be needed to make me take it seriously. About ten or so people led to more than two thousand yuan, again came more tens of people, having more than ten thousand. At that time, I became the youngest ‘WanYuanHu’<sup>[4]</sup>. In the year 2000, ten thousand yuan were not a lot of money, ‘WanYuanHu’ was also no longer a well-off family. However, the term ‘WanYuanHu’ still resounded loudly in the rural areas.

Some say that information gets blocked in the villages, but they don't understand the actual situation of the villages. Never underestimate the power of gossip. Whichever marriage, funeral, wedding reception or birthday celebration takes place in one's village, they all become the most optimum point for communication and information dissemination. This flow of information was much more unimpeded compared to cities where the upstairs and downstairs people remain unacquainted for tens of years. In case there were spirits and demons involved, then the information travels even faster.

My treating of the rheumatism in the village could naturally not be covered. Starting from the time when I was born, all matters were added a bit of spice and vividness, and finally

even a bit of supernatural elements were added. Momentarily, there was no stopping my popularity, much surpassing the momentum of a sorceress in the nearby village.

In the neighbouring village, there was a sorceress, who was reportedly capable of going to the afterlife and back. In the past, when that matter had happened to me, my parents had also run over to ask the ancestor. Later I heard that sorceress speak, my great-grandpa had also gone to meeting. My great-grandma had said angrily, that you all had wastefully burnt paper-offerings during new year's time. My parents went into introspection for a long time, anyways lacking lot of money to give the ancestor, the result was not at all useful.

After the news spread, families from ten li of the village would come every day for treatment of rheumatism. Every day there was a lot of income, Teacher Lin would take me to town every weekend to deposit money. In a short while, the number of my passbook really exceeded ten thousand yuan.

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 41

## Chapter 41 – You Won’t Agree, Then I Won’t Get Up

“100, 200, 201, 202, 203, 204, 205....don’t interrupt, don’t interrupt, where did I count up to? Aiyo, Teacher Lin, don’t don’t, the pain is killing me.” My biggest interest these days was to take out the money from the chocolate box and to count them one by one.

It would make Teacher Lin get angry every time. Just now I hadn’t noticed when Teacher Lin came back, otherwise I wouldn’t have been counting money in front of her. The result was miserable, Teacher Lin very proficiently pulled me by my ear. Probably, during her childhood, Teacher Lin frequently had her ears pulled by teachers, and this made her really proficient in pulling ears.

“Huang Jingyang, you brat, what do you intend to do with so much money?” Teacher Lin asked grinning happily.

“Renovate the house, marry a woman.” My ear was again pulled by this woman, indeed, cough, cough, cough.

“Didn’t you say that after growing up you wanted to marry Teacher Lin, eh?” Teacher Lin asked.

As I was saying, I nodded: “First to renovate the house. Repair it to become the most beautiful house in the village. Three floors, eh, no, four floors.”

“Why are you renovating the house to become so big for? Are you thinking of marrying several young women?” Teacher Lin asked laughingly.

“Will marry lots and lots of young women.” I said following along Teacher Lin’s words. Not paying even the slightest attention to the fact that I had fallen into a trap.

As a result, I was unexpectedly raised up by the beautiful woman, and then put down on a backless stool. My short pants were pulled down and my buttocks were hit several times making “pi pa pi pa” sounds: “You didn’t learn.”

“I spoke wrongly, I want to grow up, marry Teacher Lin, and have lots and lots of children.” I said laughing.

Teacher Lin giggled, actually she wasn’t hitting too heavily, and she just pulled up my pants: “You had better marry little blossom, it would be most suitable for giving birth.”

Little blossom was the youngest amongst our three patterned pigs. The three patterned pigs were named by me as Big Blossom, Second Blossom and Little Blossom.<sup>[1]</sup> At the beginning of spring time, Big Blossom, Second Blossom and Little Blossom, all three gave birth one after another, each greater than the previous. The Big Blossom whelped

ten, Second Blossom whelped eleven, and Little Blossom whelped thirteen in one stretch.

I pah, I marry Little Blossom. However, I had been pulled up by Teacher Lin, both legs incessantly pedalling, yet I still couldn't touch the ground, rather it made Teacher Lin's laugh even more pleased. I hung my head out of resignation, still being held by Teacher Lin.

"Rotten brat, still so young yet thinking of marrying lots of women, in the future you will definitely be a philanderer." Teacher Lin pinched and pulled my cheeks.

"Master, were you again spanked by Teacher Lin?" Don't know where Huang Shulang drilled out from, carrying much joy over seeing me in the hands of Teacher Lin. Even if I were being held by Teacher Lin, my appearance compared to other children still remained too handsome.

"Later, must call Master's wife, understand. When I grow up, I will be taking Teacher Lin as wife." I held my head up high and said to Huang Shulang with much panache. I had absolutely forgotten that I was still being held by Teacher Lin.

Huang Shulang somewhat hesitantly looked at Teacher Lin.

"Not hit you for just a moment, and you would tear down the roof tiles." Teacher Lin this time used her knuckles to knock me on the head twice.

At that time, I was just thinking in my heart, a real man doesn't fight with womenfolk.

Teacher Lin still gave me much face and let me down, "Huang Shulang, don't listen to Huang Jingyang. You shouldn't shout inconsiderably, otherwise I will go visit your family. Tell them you lifted Li Lijuan's skirt." [2]

Although Huang Shulang was afraid of me as a Master, he was even more afraid of Teacher Lin. At least, their family's Huang Kui would not believe in me, Huang Shulang's Master, but would listen to Teacher Lin.

Huang Shulang had been together with me for a long time, his brain functioned quite well, he said laughing: "Master, will we doing any special training today?"

"Certainly, mandatory special training. With me being such a fierce Master, if such a disciple like you covered with fear were to go out, I would not have any face. Later, I will make Black Bean chase after you for eight laps around the village. Also, must not be lazy, otherwise you will really end up below Black Bean's mouth." This fellow's brain really short-circuited. He knew perfectly that I had just been taught a lesson by Teacher Lin, but he unexpectedly delivered himself for me to vent. I just finished him.

"Don't, Ah." Huang Shulang after listening went green in the face. Only, I was the Master, I had the final say.

Looking at Huang Shulang gasping and panting for breath, while all along running forward to escape Black Bean, who had been roaring, my immature mind finally came to an equilibrium.

In the second school examination, without any suspense I took the first place in the class. Having such good private tutoring, if I didn't take first place, then there really wouldn't be justice in the world. However, what was outside people's expectations was that Huang



Shulang cast away his booked in advance throne of being the first from the last. He had come third. This point caused everyone to be taken aback.

When I reached home holding the report card, the first thing Teacher Lin did was not praise me, but rather torture me. I was somewhat worried about whether in future my ears would grow up in the direction of Zhu Bajie. [3]

“Brat, did you allow Huang Shulang to copy your answers?” Teacher Lin interrogated me.

“I did not!” This time I was really wronged. I was also just thinking of going to ask that damned fatty. How many instances of domestic violence did I have to suffer because of him?

Teacher Lin saw that this time I wasn’t lying, so was a bit gentler: “Really?”

“I didn’t even sit close to him.” I pulled out my nose. I am a person of cultivation, but at that time I almost cried unexpectedly.

“Cheating during examinations is dishonest behaviour, you know? Correct any mistakes you made, but maintain your good record if you did not make them.” Teacher Lin said.

I could feel the Primordial Qi within my body wanting to violently break out. Without any evidence, I was unexpectedly put on the hotseat. Teacher Lin became more and more violent.

When I went to thoroughly interrogate Huang Shulang, he also felt wronged: “I didn’t have many people giving the test around me. Who could I have copied from?”

“How did you suddenly become so smarter?” I scratched my head.

“How would I know. My father said that my fat has become less, and I have become more intelligent.” Huang Shulang said pleased with himself.

I carefully looked at Huang Shulang, his fat had indeed lessened. Although it was only a bit, it was still a lot for that stupid fatty.

Huang Shulang following behind my butt, suddenly became smarter. Originally, when Huang Shulang had gone along with me to Ba Jiao Mountain Main Peak, his father Huang Kui hadn’t permitted Huang Shulang to come play with me, but after the middle school results were announced, Huang Kui brought several jin of foreleg meat slices to our house.

“Little Kui, what are doing this for?” Grandpa looked somewhat surprised at the big block of foreleg meat in Huang Kui’s hand.

“Second Uncle. This is my thanks to Teacher.” Huang Kui’s face was full of smiles. His face was also full of quite a lot of fat. Huang Shulang had definitely inherited his genes.

“En, so it is for Teacher Lin.” Grandpa nodded.

“This time it is for YangYang. Doesn’t my child call your little YangYang Master?” Huang Kui put the hind-leg meat that he was holding onto the table.

“For YangYang?” Grandpa was startled very much.

“Definitely it is for YangYang, my child this time got third rank in his class.”

Grandpa laughed: “Good, earlier he used to be first from the bottom, this time finally third

from the bottom, finally advanced two ranks.”

Grandpa absolutely didn't expect that Huang Shulang could obtain any good rank in test.

I came out from the room: “Grandpa, you are mistaken. Huang Shulang this time isn't third from the last, but rather he is third from the first.”

“Impossible.” Grandpa definitely couldn't believe.

Huang Kui's face became awkward: “Second Uncle, this time my child is really the third ranker. You see, this is the report card.”

Grandpa took a look, and his eyes opened wide. Literature & Language 86, Mathematics 90. Really is the third ranked.

“Your ancestral graves are emitting green smoke.” Grandpa said after quite a while. <sup>[4]</sup>

Huang Kui's mood also improved, why would Grandpa say anything randomly. His face was full of smiles.

“You all mustn't suspect student Huang Shulang. This time he has achieved through his own hard work. Has really improved.”

Huang Kui walked to my front, and bowed down to me. Out of fright, I immediately hid behind Teacher Lin.

“YangYang, Uncle was confused earlier. Believing in superstition, I followed the other villagers in disliking you. I really butchering pigs turned into pig through killing. You are such an intelligent child, how could you be an unlucky star. Clearly you are the Wen Qu Star.<sup>[5]</sup> Later, if you want to beat or scold our fatty, no problem. Second Uncle, this meat I have brought is to thank YangYang. I'll be leaving first.” Huang Kui turned around to walk.

Inside the house, the vision of both the adults focused onto me. I hadn't seen many aspects of the world, how could I understand these gazes. I could only feel somewhat of a chill in the air, right?

I started running at once, but my two legs were airborne, how could I run out. Teacher Lin was swift of eyes and quick of hand, and unexpectedly raised me up.

At school the next day, Ma Jindong walked to me, then dropped to his knees, bent his waist, and bowed his head into a kowtow: “Ma-Master acc-.....accept this young disciple's-.....-obeisance.” <sup>[6]</sup>

I jumped in surprise, almost knelt back to Ma Jindong.

“Your father, I haven't died, what are you kneeling at me for?” I barely stopped myself from hitting out of anger.

“I, I, I also just like Huang, Huang Shulang, want, want..... want to become a disciple.” Listening to these few words of Ma Jindong, also made me feel hurt. Because he from time to time would go into an infinite loop.

Ma Jindong was also very straightforward, since his tongue wasn't agile, he directly kowtowed to me three times.

“I, I, I cannot take you as a disciple. Staying with you for a long time, perhaps I may even learn your stutter. When the time comes, will I be a Master, or will you be considered Master?” I really didn’t want to teach Ma Jindong, because I could get unexpectedly influenced by him.

“I.....I will change.” Ma Jindong promptly said.

“Still won’t do. By the time you would change, I would begin stuttering. There is only loss.” I promptly walked away.

Ma Jindong shouted at me loudly: If you don’t agree, I won’t stand up!”

See, this is the poison of movies.

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 42

## Chapter 42 – Two Tagalongs

“Aren’t you two being too bothersome? If I go to the toilet, will you also accompany?” Ever since I accepted Ma Jindong as my second disciple, two people had been following behind me. Whither I walked, thither they followed. At first it felt quite impressive. However, after a long time of it, it felt somewhat unbearable.

Huang Shulang with his face full of smiles: “It just so happens that I was also thinking of going to the toilet.”

“I also.....also was thinking of going to urinate.” Ma Jindong also spoke stammeringly. This fellow’s tongue doesn’t function that well, but his mind is quite outstanding. Earlier, Huang Shulang was not like this, but since this Ma Jindong has come threatening his position, Huang Shulang also had no choice but to follow behind me closely.

“Ma Jindong, you said that you will correct yourself, your stammering. I am seeing that you haven’t made even a bit of progress.” I said angrily.

“I.....I, change.....change.” A foolish laugh emerged on Ma Jindong’s face. This was precisely his disguise. He has deceived everyone, but he won’t deceive me now.

“I suddenly don’t want to go to the toilet, you two can go ahead first.” Just as I was about to enter the bathroom, I abruptly turned about.

Huang Shulang was somewhat embarrassed, he didn’t know what to do. Ma Jindong was nevertheless quite blunt, and directly followed behind. Huang Shulang, seeing this, also didn’t want to fall behind, as he promptly followed suit.

There would be many students who would stand in the surroundings and watch this group of ours. I had a feeling that this was like seeing a monkey show for others.

“I am giving you two your assignments. Go right now and finish running ten laps of the garden, don’t come back without finishing.” I could only exercise my right as a Master to control these two buffoons.

Huang Shulang originally still wanted to act dumb, however Ma Jindong actually without even making a sound ran out. Huang Shulang also looked at me resentfully, and ran out.

“10 Laps! If even a single lap is missing, don’t come back!” I shouted at the backs of those two.

Only after these two buffoons left could I finally relax.

This was a good method. During class there was Teacher Lin present, they wouldn’t dare trouble me. After class, I began looking for jobs for them to do, they would not have the

time to come vex me. I, Huang Jingyang, don't walk the ordinary path.

After school ends, of the two ass beetles, one would hold my backpack, one would bring me water. It felt unexpectedly good.

I quickly reached the main gate of the house, and at that time I immediately snatched my bag and said: "Each one go to their own houses, each one seek out their own mothers." Only then did these two hurry back to their own homes.

A few strangers had come to my house, they were sitting in the eaves talking with Grandpa, seeing me come, immediately stood up.

"These people are from Da Haishu Village, they are also suffering from flared up rheumatism. Want to have you treat them." Grandpa told me the purpose of these people visiting.

"Grandpa didn't you say that I should no longer treat people?"

In the village, after earning more than ten thousand, not many villagers came. Grandpa had heard some baseless rumors in the village. The villagers were saying that I Huang Jingyang just casually treating, demand two hundred, and in a short while have earned more than ten thousand. Other people have to go outside the village and do hard labour for more than a year to earn that much. Saying that I recognized only money, and could casually treat fellow villagers of home village, but still demand so much money. Rather, it would be better to go to a barefoot doctor and get an injection, than wasting their money on me. Grandpa became very angry after hearing of this, and later came back to tell me to no longer treat people.

"No, ah. Dr. Huang, you must not listen to the idle talk of others. These people are just jealous. Don't those barefoot doctors take money for injections? For this leg sickness of mine, I have gone to a lot of hospitals big and small, just the fare money would be more than two hundred. You charging two hundred is not expensive, rather, you're charging much less." Those words of that Uncle from Da Haishu village, lifted up my spirits.

"I think that it is probably those barefoot doctors of your village who have done this mischief. Otherwise, such simple reasoning, who wouldn't be able to understand? Taking injection, taking drugs is unable to cure the sickness, but the expenditure remains huge. You here are able to cure the sickness, but only charge two hundred yuan. Just being able to point with their fingers, the people of your village are unable to understand?" The person who had come from Da Haishu village was indeed a sensible person.

Grandpa took a puff from the tobacco pipe and then knocked the pipe hard on the threshold, almost knocking out the ash from inside, "They are jealous, just jealous, people from nearby areas are all coming, but they still want to have people return in vain? You feel free to treat their illnesses."

By the time Teacher Lin came home, I had already sent off the customers from Da Haishu village. They were very delighted because the chronic illnesses that had been vexing and puzzling them had been cured by me in one stroke. I was also very happy. When Teacher Lin returned home, I was happily counting money.

"So immature, a little bit of money makes you so happy." Teacher Lin said disdainfully.

“Teacher Lin, what is your monthly salary?” I said with a smile.<sup>[1]</sup>

“Huang Jingyang!” Teacher Lin finally erupted, grabbed me by my collar, and put me on a backless stool, while she did a five hit combo on my butt.

“Don’t you adults always say that a gentleman uses his mouth not his fist?” I asked feebly.

“You are a child, moreover, I am a woman, not a gentleman.” Teacher Lin threw me onto the ground, not even feeling the least bit of guilty for bullying a child.

“Teacher Lin, how much money does it cost for renovating a building?” I asked.

“Depends on how big the renovation is. Renovating a three to four story building, would cost hundreds of thousands. Adding to that the furnishing costs, should be more than two hundred thousand. Your small bit of money is not even sufficient to raise a shelf.” Teacher Lin casually struck me down.

“I, in one month, earned more than ten thousand yuan, then within two years I can renovate the house.” I said counting on my fingers.

“Your main task right now is to study, and not to make money. After you go to college, you will be able to make more money.” Teacher Lin said.

“How much money can a college graduate earn in one month?” I asked puzzledly.

“If having a good job, then the annual salary can be several hundred thousand.” Teacher Lin said somewhat evasively.

“Is that good?” I asked.

“Don’t you have any ambition? Have only about several thousand yuan.” Teacher Lin said somewhat guiltily.

“Ah, after studying at a university, the wages would still be not as good as I am earning now?” I asked very much startled, “Then isn’t studying at university just a waste?”

Teacher Lin after thinking for a bit said: “Don’t you like calligraphy? You, after going to university, can not only study seal script, but also study even more ancient culture, such as oracle script.”

“What is oracle script?” I asked somewhat surprised.

“Next time I return home, I will bring some material back for you.” Teacher Lin said.

I liked seal script, because on the bronze medal that I was wearing on my neck, was the damned seal script. It planted a Dao Seed within me. Thereby making me have a natural intimacy with seal script. However, I didn’t know that unexpectedly there was a type of script that was even more ancient than seal script.

Primordial Qi could be condensed into seal script characters with various mystical functions. Primordial Qi usage while chanting aoeiuü could have somewhat of a magical power.<sup>[2]</sup> However, I wasn’t able to have complete control over these things. It was just like seeing a mountain of treasure, but lacking the means to actually take out any of the treasures from the mountain.

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 43

## Chapter 43 – Rage

Eldest Grandpa rushed to our house at night, “Be careful of Liu Tailong, I have heard people that he was boasting about coming to find trouble with you.”

Liu Tailong was the village’s barefoot doctor, I had heard that he studied in medical school for two years, also is just able to cure the common cold. At last one patient who came to see him regarding an illness, was given an injection which led to his death. Liu Tailong’s Uncle Liu Fangben was the village’s Family Planning Specialist Cadre.<sup>[1]</sup> That patient’s family lost an able member when he was given an injection and killed, the compensation would have run into several thousand of yuan, even if it were compromised.

This Liu Tailong person was famous for being Black Hearted, on visits to patients who have caught cold, he just casually hangs water and charges tens of yuan. However, the villagers are also somewhat muddled egg-heads. Regarding the matter of rheumatism, year after year, they would waste money on Liu Tailong, and unexpectedly help out Liu Tailong in boycotting my treatment. Liu Tailong had been the barefoot doctor for only a few years, but he had already completely overhauled his house. In the village, the house with the most imposing manner was his.

I naturally understood why Liu Tailong would want to come make trouble for my family. The treatment I was giving to villagers for rheumatism was curing it, it was equal to breaking off his source of income. Moreover, I had cured many people. The villagers were very distinct, also understood how much money I had already made. This was also one of main root causes of jealousy. I, a child, earning more than adults. Why wouldn’t those people be jealous. Out of the many jealous people at the moment, Liu Tailong was one. Although he couldn’t earn this money, seeing me earn was making him suffer. He would naturally not be resigned.

Grandpa was also somewhat anxiously puffing the tobacco. Grandpa was an honest and dutiful person, plus he was aged. Most likely I would be able to keep him safe. Facing this kind of threat, he neither has a means to solve, nor does he have the means to protect me completely.

“In the future, this matter of treating rheumatism, it would be better to forget it. Quarrels are too many.”

“Uncle, you don’t worry. At present we are living in a lawful society, they wouldn’t dare be unreasonable. Huang Jingyang also hasn’t done anything wrong. What can they do?” Teacher Lin said consoling.

Eldest Grandpa said: “I heard people say that the main reason is that YangYang doesn’t

have any certificate for treating illnesses, and calling it illegal private practise. For practising illegally, arrest and imprisonment is also possible.”

“Huang Jingyang cannot be considered to be doing illegal practise. Firstly, Huang Jingyang’s is young, there absolutely cannot be any criminal liability which can be imposed. Moreover, Huang Jingyang gives massage to people to treat rheumatism, this also cannot be considered as practising medicine. Not even a single injection, and moreover no medicine prescribed. The money collected is also the massage therapy’s labour money. This matter doesn’t pertain to the Health Department’s jurisdiction.” Teacher Lin said.

“Really there is no issue?” Grandpa still wasn’t reassured.

“Certainly no issue. Rest assured I will take responsibility for Huang Jingyang. I am his teacher.” Teacher Lin guaranteed.

People don’t fight with the government. Rural people don’t like confronting government officials, even after all the arm and thigh twisting, unless as a last resort, who would wish to confront government officials. Although this Liu Tailong couldn’t be considered a government official, his uncle Liu Fangben was actually a village cadre. Liu Fangben was quite popular in the village, he had frequent dealings with the Health and Family Planning committee, he had a wide approach, perhaps he may even be knowing some county level cadre too. Just in case this matter were to provoke him, then what could be done about it? Therefore, Grandpa was still frowning deeply.

I was also somewhat nervous in my mind, but several days passed without any incident, absolutely didn’t see any of the aforementioned people come to the village.

However, several days later, Eldest Grandpa came rushing panting and gasping for breath to the Ba Jiao Primary School.

“YangYang, not good, not good, lot of people have come from the county, want to seize the objects in your house.”

I broke out into a run the moment I heard.

My two disciples Huang Shulang and Ma Jindong also followed closely behind.

We hadn’t even entered the courtyard, when far away some people could be heard yelling in my courtyard: “Huang Minggui! I have come to inform you, the people of the County Health Office have come, your family is illegally practicing medicine, as per law regulations, you are penalized for 10,000 yuan.

This person’s voice seemed to belong to the village’s barefoot doctor Liu Tailong.

“Liu Tailong, you are just a barefoot doctor, nothing more. You yourself also don’t have the credentials to practice medicine similarly?” Heard this voice which seemed to belong to Huang Shulang’s father Huang Kui.

“Huang Kui, you don’t have anything to do with here, you had best stay out of this. Otherwise you will be guilty of hindering a public official.” Liu Tailong was very rampant.

“Are you, as a barefoot doctor, going to execute dogfart official business. Why don’t you



go ahead and dare try arresting me, your father!” Huang Kui was also famous in the village for being rude and unreasonable.

At this time, someone said loudly: “Quiet down for me everyone! I am from County Health Office, some people from your village have reported that Huang Jingyang is illegally practising medicine. Who is Huang Jingyang?”

“Are you all looking for me?” I entered my house’s courtyard, and saw a big crowd of people standing in the courtyard. Amongst them there was a stranger wearing a uniform.

“He is indeed Huang Jingyang!” Liu Tailong pointed at me shouting happily.

However, the other several people after looking at me felt something amiss.

“When you spoke about Huang Jingyang, you were talking about this child?” The speaker was a somewhat over 40 years old man, wearing a uniform, apparently looked like the leader of the cadre. Later, I came to know that he was Health Bureau’s Assistant Bureau Chief Han Minghai.

“It is precisely him, he is practising medicine illegally.” Liu Tailong said.

Han Minghai’s complexion went bad, as he turned his head to stare at a similarly uniformed youth. The young man lowered his head.

Han Minghai disgruntledly looked at Liu Tailong and said: “You first come to one side.”

Han Minghai having finished saying this came to my side: “Child, some people have reported that you are illegally practising medicine, are you practising medicine illegally?”

“I don’t know what illegally practising medicine means.” I said.

“Huang Jingyang, you dare to say you don’t? You treated the rheumatism of the villagers, charging two hundred yuan from each. The villagers can all testify.” Liu Tailong couldn’t help but jump out.

“Did I give them any injection or did I give them any prescription?” I coldly looked at Liu Tailong.

“I....” Liu Tailong was left dumbstruck and unable to reply, however, he soon counter-argued, “In any case, it is a fact that you received two hundred yuan from them.”

“Their rheumatism was difficult to deal with, I gave them massage, they gave me labour charge, don’t tell me they shouldn’t?” I had already been prepared well in advance by Teacher Lin.

Liu Tailong at that time was flabbergasted.

Han Minghai was also very much surprised, he hadn’t thought that this primary school student, would be able to have such a free and unconstrained style of conversation in front of so many adults, and even more had made Liu Tailong, an adult left with nothing to say.

“Child, then can you tell me how did you cure the rheumatism of those villagers?”

I shook my head: “I also don’t know. I frequently used to give my Grandpa foot massages, and after a period of time, Grandpa’s rheumatism was cured. Later, the villagers told me to massage them also. I gave them massage, they gave me money. Finally, Liu Tailong said

that I am illegally practising medicine, you see whether this is illegally practising medicine?”

“This?” Han Minghai was also stumped on the spot by me.

How could Liu Tailong be resigned to the Health Bureau people letting off my family? He screamed immediately: “Bureau Chief Han, their family is definitely practising illegally, in just this village he has personally cured several tens of people’s rheumatism, he has also earned at least over ten thousand yuan. Later, people from outside the village also began coming, he earned even more. Some people noticed Teacher Lin of the Ba Jiao Primary School, every week taking Huang Jingyang to go to the town to deposit money, up till now, he probably has deposited several tens of thousand yuan.”

Grandpa seeing that Liu Tailong was unwilling to overlook and unwilling to spare, at once came forward with his theory: “Liu Tailong, by whose wrong injection did Li Xingnian die? Their entire family was broken up and decimated by you. You using your uncle Liu Fangben influence as village cadre, to force Li Xingnian’s wife to remarry. Now, the old and the young are dead, are scattered. Was your conscience eaten by dogs? You are now obstructing my YangYang’s source of livelihood, you just called the Health Bureau, and also want to get a hold of my grandson. This remaining short life of mine, I don’t want, I will be taking you down with me!”

Grandpa rushed out, wanting to hit Liu Tailong.

Liu Tailong forcefully pushed out Grandpa. Grandpa being aged, how could he compete with the young and vigorous Liu Tailong, and was pushed to the ground directly.

At that time I was like a gasoline drum in which a spark had been thrown, the raging fire soared and combusted. Originally, I had no clue regarding how to move Primordial Qi. However, at this moment, the entirety of the Primordial Qi within my body was mobilized by me.

Actually, no one clearly saw how I rushed to Liu Tailong’s side, a shadow flashed by, and then Liu Tailong flew across the courtyard, hitting the courtyard wall and spitting out blood on the spot. Liu Tailong shouldn’t have touched my reverse scale. My Grandpa was the most-most important person in my life. He unexpectedly dared to harm him. Then, he needed to face my wrath.

What made everyone overwhelmed with shock, was that I suddenly began to float in air, and pounced on Liu Tailong who was already lying down on the ground with no indication of life or death.

“Huang Jingyang! Still haven’t checked on Grandpa?” Teacher Lin’s voice was like a clap of thunder, making me, who had already completely lost my reasoning, come back to my senses.

Grandpa! Right, compared to Grandpa, Liu Tailong is just an ant.

I changed my direction mid-air, and threw myself towards Grandpa.

Grandpa was quite old, being pushed to the ground like that by Liu Tailong, he was sitting on the ground, unexpectedly had sustained a bone fracture. His head had struck on the grinding mill, and he had fainted on the spot. I without the least bit of apprehension, I

induced Primordial Qi into the body of Grandpa. Making Grandpa's injuries heal rapidly. Grandpa slowly regained consciousness, opening his eyes and seeing me: "YangYang, Grandpa was just worried about you, ah."

"Grandpa, I won't let you die. That Liu Tailong, I will kill him!" I tightly held Grandpa and placed him on the bed in the room.

Teacher Lin also came in behind: "Huang Jingyang, you have sobered up! Grandpa's injuries have become like this, if something were to happen to you, who will take care of Grandpa? Even though Liu Tailong is wretched, he has already received his punishment. Don't let the matter become big, otherwise you won't ever again be able to live a normal life."

Teacher Lin was afraid that I would go out and kill Liu Tailong, and was tightly holding me.

My rage was slowly subsiding.

At that time, I heard the voice of Han Minghai from the courtyard: "We are from the County Bureau of Health, we received a mass report so we came here to investigate if there was anything relating to illegal practice of medicine. Liu Tailong was a reporter, his actions have nothing to do with us, we have only come here to verify the situation. Also, I hadn't intended on imposing any penalty. That was entirely Liu Tailong acting for himself. This matter of him punching an elderly will be reported by us truthfully to the Public Security Bureau. Moreover, we will also be investigating incidents of malpractice related to Liu Tailong."

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 44

## Chapter 44 – Wonderful Method of Curing Stammering

Han Minghai, by saying this, naturally wanted to wash away his responsibility entirely. It taught me that injustice has a head, debt has a owner. He was totally scared of me. He had never seen someone capable of doing something so terrifying. Moreover, he hasn't seen any child who has been able to induce such terror in an adult. [TLNote: This is actually a chengyu (Idiom), which basically means that you must go after the main person responsible. Also the chinese terms for Grievance and Head combine to form Injustice/Grievance, and Debt + Owner becomes Creditor]

Han Minghai even directly abandoned Liu Tailong and ran straight to the Health Bureau along with his people. Later, the villagers called for an ambulance and had Liu Tailong sent to the hospital. Then, I heard that six or seven ribs of Liu Tailong had been broken by me. If it wasn't for the fact that Grandpa had planted some vegetables in the corner and put up a rack, which acted as a cushion, and instead, he had struck the wall directly, then he would probably be dead.

That day, Liu Fangben came to our house, but he didn't dare to ask for compensation for the medical expenses. Instead, he asked about Grandpa's injuries and said that Liu Tailong had acted on his own. Liu Fangben was afraid that I would vent my anger on him as well. This matter, Liu Tailong couldn't have such great capabilities. This Family Planning Specialist Cadre certainly played a big role.

Liu Fangben, along with the many things he had brought along, was picked up by me and thrown out directly into our house's fish pond.

This time, Grandpa and Teacher Lin didn't stop me. Good people are taken advantage of, everyone lays down the load on the willing horse — I knew this principle.

Black Bean came running up to me and used his head to rub against my legs. He was sent flying by my kick. While groaning, he rolled on the ground and miserably looked at me.

"When the dog doesn't know to protect Master, what use does it still have?" I scolded Black Bean.

Actually, this matter cannot be said to be entirely Black Bean's fault. When these people had entered the house, Grandpa would have certainly stopped Black Bean from shouting. However, by the time Liu Tailong struck out, it was already too late for Black Bean to act. Even after Liu Tailong acted, its speed couldn't be as fast as mine. Moreover, my appearance at that time would have also scared it.

Black Bean didn't dare to approach me. It could only lay down on the ground no matter how much I scolded him.

“Why are you scolding Black Bean? It cannot make out human speech, it also couldn’t know that Liu Tailong would hit Grandpa.” Teacher Lin said.

“Teacher Lin is right. You, this child, making a move also doesn’t have that much meaning. Just in case, if you had killed a person, then what could have been done?” Grandpa didn’t care about himself getting hurt. He was only afraid that this grandson would be left behind with a legal case in his background; that would surely destroy his entire life. Grandpa didn’t understand the law, he only knew that killing a person was a crime.

“Uncle, this time’s matter cannot be blamed on Huang Jingyang. However, in the future, you cannot be so impulsive.” Teacher Lin said.

When we finally entered the room, Teacher Lin curiously asked: “Huang Jingyang, can you jump just as far as today? It seemed like you were flying.”

“I also don’t know.” I had almost forgotten about it already. It was different from the time when I had flew out from the cave at the waterfall on Ba Jiao Mountain. That time, I soared up in the air while completely lacking any awareness; moreover, it seemed like an instinct. However, after that matter had passed, I wasn’t left with even the least bit of impression. At this time, if I thought of flying again, it would be absolutely impossible. I could fly once more by using Primordial Qi 风 (Wind) character, but the feeling of that type of flying is completely different.

“Huang Jingyang, how are you so special?” Teacher Lin gently stroked my head.

Huang Shulang and Ma Jindong had — at that time — ran back to bring their families and had returned back at this time.

“Master!” They were continuously shouting in the courtyard.

“Go. Your apprentices call for you.” Teacher Lin laughingly said.

I walked out.

“Master, tomorrow, I will go to Liu Tailong’s house and pour a bottle of insecticide into their pot to poison their entire family to death.” Huang Shulang said.

Ma Jindong said: “I will go to th....., their rice cooker and inside....., pour a packet of rat poison, making their entire family die....., die out completely.”

“Utter rubbish. The matters of your father, I, you don’t need to take care of.” I scolded them.

“Wh....., Why can not....., not take care? You are our Teacher.....” Ma Jindong’s tongue got stuck at the Teacher character into an endless loop, and he kept continuously stamping his feet, but he couldn’t stop. [TLNote: Master (Shi Fu) is made of Shi meaning Teacher, and Fu meaning Father] Both of his eyes turned white.

I slapped my hand directly onto Ma Jindong’s head. A strand of Primordial Qi directly entered Ma Jindong’s head.

Ma Jindong was finally able to stop his endless loop, and he squatted down onto the ground to gasp for breath.

“Will you, with this pitiful appearance, give vent to Master’s anger? First, straighten out your tongue and then speak.” Huang Shulang, while laughing thoughtlessly, pointed at Ma Jindong. As a result, he had his head fiercely struck by me.

“Others can laugh at Ma Jindong, but you should not laugh. He is your younger disciple; you’re not taking care of him, yet instead is imitating others and even look down on him? You looking down on him is just like looking down on me. This kind of a disciple, I don’t want.”

Huang Shulang immediately knelt down onto the ground, and while holding his right hand, he swore: “Master, I swear, from now on, I won’t ridicule my junior disciple. Whoever dares to ridicule my junior disciple, I will beat him!”

“Senior disciple, from now on, I also won’t say that you are a big fat pig.” Ma Jindong said very much moved.

“What did you say just now? Say it one more time!” I felt that there was something strange when Ma Jindong spoke.

“I just said that later, I won’t call Senior Disciple a big fat pig.” Ma Jindong said as he was unable to understand the matter.

“Did you hear something not right just now?” I asked Huang Shulang.

Huang Shulang was also somewhat muddle-headed. He foolishly said: “No, nothing’s wrong?”

“I....., I didn’t,.....didn’t stutter.” Ma Jindong finally realized. However, at this moment, the stuttering returned.

“I was just saying how there was something strange about the way you spoke. So it turned out to be like this; all of a sudden, you stopped stuttering and it felt somewhat strange.” Only now was I able to understand what the strange thing was.

“The,.....then I will lat,.....later conti.....continue to stutter. This way Ma....., Master would become accustomed somewhat.”

I, again, knocked Ma Jindong on the head: “Accustomed to wha, what? Huang Shulang and I would very quickly begin to stutter by staying with you.”

“Then I will strive hard to change.” Ma Jindong again spoke in a seemingly fluent manner.

“You must change. If you don’t change, then I will bea, beat you!” Huang Shulang raised his fist; he didn’t dare to begin in front of me.

“Ma Jindong, starting from today, you cannot stutter again. Every time you stutter, you will get punched once, understood?” I also raised my fist.

“Understood, understood. Starting today, I can’t stutter again. For every time I stutter, I will get punched once.” Ma Jindong spoke one word after another in one breath. This time, he unexpectedly did not stutter.

Huang Shulang and I stared at him. I then laughingly said: “It seems that it is better for you, Ma Jindong, to be beaten. After you are hit, you don’t stutter. Huang Shulang, in the future, you are responsible for monitoring Ma Jindong. Whenever he starts to stutter, you

have me hit him at once.”

Huang Shulang immediately became ecstatic. His face became full of smiles: “Master, I would certainly ensure that Ma Jindong’s stuttering problem is corrected.”

Huang Shulang raised a clenched fist towards Ma Jindong and said: “Understood? You better be careful, or I will beat you up!”

“While its still not dark yet, you two quickly run to the river bank and collect pebbles in two baskets. You must run all the way, don’t stop!” After I finished speaking, Huang Shulang and Ma Jindong quickly started running. Each of them grabbed a basket before running out.

“Master, you want so many pebbles, what are you going to do?” Huang Shulang’s voice came from very far away.

“Would my house’s repair in the future not require pebbles for the flooring?” I unhappily said.

“Would you even allow them to practice kungfu?” Teacher Lin came out laughing. They, in any case, had become accustomed to seeing strange sights in my way of teaching my disciples. Regardless, their parents would also not oppose it. Huang Shulang’s body fat had also decreased by a lot. He also became a much more intelligent person. No matter how you look at it, it is a good thing. Torment and torment again and again, how could one still be called a child who is not tormented.

Huang Kui came again while carrying several jin of meat. He met me at the entrance as he immediately smiled and said: “Have you made those two young fellows bring back pebbles, ah? This method is good. Later, in order to make them have the Shaolin Monaster’s Needle Base and Iron Arms, I would make them go to Ba Jiao Mountain’s Pool and bring back water.”

“Uncle Kui, this method of yours is good. Later, when Huang Shulang comes back, I will tell him of your idea.” I said with a smile.

“Don’t Don’t Don’t, I want to do a good thing without seeking recognition. I have — all along — been good to my child. You must not tell him.” Huang Kui panicked. Huang Kui was not afraid of Huang Shulang. Rather, he was afraid of Huang Shulang’s mother. If Huang Shulang’s mother were to know of these thoughts of Huang Kui to torment Huang Shulang, would she let Huang Kui off?

Huang Kui promptly entered the house while carrying the meat.

“Black Bean, come, I have brought a meat bone for you.” When Huang Kui entered the house, Black Bean was dispiritedly lying down at the entrance. Even after seeing Huang Kui’s meat bone, he didn’t pay any more attention to it and continued to lay down lazily.

“Uncle, what happened to Black Bean?” Huang Kui laid down the meat on the table and asked Grandpa in a low voice.

Grandpa, seeing Huang Kui bringing meat again, promptly said: “Kui child, why did you bring so much meat again?”

“Second Uncle, regarding today’s matter, I really am useless. I didn’t think that Liu

Tailong — that bastard — would unexpectedly dare to hit you. If I had paid attention earlier, you wouldn't have gotten injured because of him. You've just suffered a major injury; your body is suffering so you must eat nicely. My family is a butcher's family; aside from pork, we don't have anything else. Your good self must not avoid it." While Huang Kui spoke on one hand, on the other he began moving his hands quickly. Huang Kui frequently used knives, and his craftsmanship was pretty good. Within two to three seconds, all of the meat had been sliced down into equal sized meat pieces. After that, he put them into a bowl and started cooking.

"Uncle, what's the matter with Black Bean today? Usually when I come, it becomes really happy and cheerful." Huang Kui asked again.

"It's nothing, it's just that it had been scolded by YangYang. This fellow really acts like a person, it understands human speech. He has been grieving ever since he has been scolded by YangYang." Grandpa glanced at me as I stood outside as before.

"Black Bean, YangYang doesn't want you, but I need you. Later, come to our house and eat meat bones every day." Huang Kui said while laughing.

"Hou!" This all of a sudden infuriated Black Bean. All of its hair suddenly stood up as it suddenly changed. It turned over from lying to standing while bending its body slightly. This was all in preparation to attack Huang Kui.

"Black Bean. You still haven't come out! Go have a look at Huang Shulang and the others and see if they are goofing off or not!" I shouted from the outside.

Black Bean immediately jumped out from the room. It fell down on me and forcefully rubbed against me.

"You still haven't gone quickly!" Although my manner of speaking was still as cold as ever, it didn't stop Black Bean.

Black Bean immediately ran out from the courtyard cheerfully.

Grandpa laughingly said to Huang Kui: "You really spoke offensively. You still didn't know that Black Bean had, all along, been a very loyal dog. You wanted to bribe him with a few meat bones? Next time you come to my house, you must take care of yourself."



# My Daoist Life - Chapter 45

## Chapter 45 – If This Can Bear, Bull Cannot

Black Bean could really hold a grudge, and in the village if anyone were to throw stone at him, then later he would have to be very careful. Uncle Kui this time could really be considered to have offended him. Although Black Bean may not bare its fangs when he comes to my house, but he would no longer be as cordial as before. In response to Uncle Kui's frosting covered artillery shell, the frosting on it would be eaten while the artillery shell would be returned back.

In this way, my days once again returned to normalcy. Finally, May arrived and the early maturing plums ripened. Early maturing peaches could also be eaten. My house's chickens, ducks and geese had also grown up.

Grandpa and I went to village branch secretary Huang Lisheng's house, to call up He Dachao, the peddler who had left his card with us during new year's celebration time.

Huang Lisheng was very surprised upon hearing that we were calling up a poultry dealer: "Your house's poultry is really rare, it grows up so quickly. If it were not for me knowing the whole story, I would still be under the impression that it was due to your house's feed. Yangyang, your breeding technique is so good, you should consider opening a specialized breeding firm later on at home."

"That is something for later. I don't want him doing these kind of things, it would be better if he is able to do something with studies." Grandpa said with a smile.

"Also right, your Yangyang's results are also good. Heard that he came first in middle school results. Your family has reaped the most benefit from arrival of Teacher Lin. It didn't even enter the thoughts of other households." Huang Lisheng said laughing.

"Teacher Lin is a good person, what a pity she's not a person of the village, only feared that sooner or later she would return to the city." Grandpa sighed. He was also somewhat worried about how I would change after Teacher Lin goes away.

"Teacher Lin won't go, later when I will grow up, she will become my wife." I wasn't very happy with them commenting on Teacher Lin.

Huang Lisheng laughed: "Then you should hurry up and grow a bit faster, otherwise Teacher Lin may marry someone else."

He Dachao received our call, we didn't expect that he would still remember Grandpa and me. Upon hearing that our house's chickens, ducks and geese were ready to be taken away, he immediately and unreservedly agreed to personally come to the village. The price offered also was very high. The current market price for chicken was only seven-

eight yuan for a jin, but He Dachao had agreed to give us fifteen-sixteen yuan.

“Second brother, the current market price is seven-eight yuan, he is giving you fifteen-sixteen yuan, is that person reliable?” Huang Lisheng was a bit anxious, listening from the side.

“We know this person from last new year’s celebration’s time. He bought a cage full of chicken from us. He said that he had delivered it to a hotel. The price can be a bit high, but he requires good chicken. He doesn’t seem like a bad person. Moreover, he has agreed to come take away the chicken from the village, and is still quoting such a high price. Is there still any fear that the other person is deceiving us?” Grandpa laughingly said.

Huang Lisheng nodded: “That is true. If it was a swindler, then he would have made you come to the town. However, Second Uncle, you must still remain cautious. Nowadays, prices can be manipulated in numerous ways. When the time comes, you must look carefully.”

“It’s ok, Teacher Lin and Yangyang both are at home. He won’t be able to deceive this Old man.” Grandpa had extreme faith in me and Teacher Lin.

“This is also true.” Huang Lisheng glanced at me. I also had a fearsome reputation outside right now. Even the village idlers had started taking detours around my house.

Grandpa and I handed over money to Huang Lisheng after finishing the telephone call. This time, Huang Lisheng was unwilling to accept: “Second Brother, what are you thinking, this telephone call worth a few yuan. We both write the Huang character, we are one family, what money? Later, whenever you need to make phone call come to my house. Oh right, Second Brother. There’s a matter you and Yangyang need to be careful of a bit. That Liu Tailong fellow is a hooligan, he knows quite a few dubious fellows in the village. I am worried that he still wants to do something, you had best be careful.”

I erupted as soon as I heard Liu Tailong’s name, “If he dares to come, I will finish him!”

Huang Lisheng retracted his neck upon hearing these words of mine. He couldn’t believe that I, this child, could speak such words. Who in the village would still consider me as an ordinary child? Could a child who dares to hold human life in the same regard as killing chickens, be still considered an ordinary child?

However, although the matter that had earlier occurred in my house’s courtyard had been witnessed by a lot of people of Ba Jiao Village and had also been spread outside, but not many people had believed. Han Minghai having suffered such big loss as a big shot. He probably also didn’t speak to anyone after returning. Although the people of Health Bureau knew that Han Minghai had suffered a loss in Ba Jiao village, but nobody knew that Han Minghao had suffered a loss at a child’s hands. A child of the first grade who dared to kill people. If this kind of talks were spread outside, then it would only invite laughter of the listeners.

This also meant that Liu Tailong would still be able to invite people to come from the Town to deal with me. At the same time, the common hoodlums also don’t dare come to the village. The people of Ba Jiao Village were quite valiant. In the time of Production teams, whenever any person were to come from outside to make trouble. With only a shout, several hundred people would take up hoes and rakers to come and form an

encirclement instantly. No matter what kind of knife, it would be inferior to the usefulness of a shoulderpole. At that time, seeing a couple of people being savagely beaten was a common thing. As long as no death is caused, this kind of a thing wouldn't be prosecuted. [TLNote: Period around 1958-1984  
[https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Production\\_team\\_\(China\)](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Production_team_(China))]

However, Grandpa was still very anxious, and kept warning me: "Yangyang, later whenever you go out you must be a bit cautious."

I laughingly said: "Grandpa, you relax. It's ok even if I don't go to try and seek them out, they would still come and find me. Heh heh."

"You this child, you cannot let anyone feel relieved. Later after school is dismissed, you must not come back immediately. Come back with Teacher Lin." Grandpa said.

"I am not afraid." I said disapprovingly.

"I know you are not afraid. Aren't you afraid that those after you, could try to go after Teacher Lin?" Grandpa reminded.

This was something that was difficult to guard against. It was also giving me a big headache: Safeguarding Teacher Lin, and worrying about Grandpa. Safeguarding Grandpa and worrying about Teacher Lin.

"Grandpa, is there any family with a newborn pup? I still want to raise two more dogs." I stopped after walking a few steps.

"Why are you going to raise so many dogs?" Grandpa asked puzzledly.

"I just want to raise them." I was a child, can a child be reasoned with?

Grandpa was left with no option but to agree: "Ok, I will be take that into consideration."

"Nevermind, I remember that in the Town's Farmer's market there are wolfdogs for sale. Those dogs after growing up become quite bold and powerful. On sunday, I will go to the Town headman to buy two wolfdog pups." I changed my mind.

"Those kind of wolfdog pups are very expensive. How will our house raise so many dogs?" Grandpa was afraid of squandering money.

"Not afraid of thief stealing, but keep fearing in mind the thief stealing. [TLNote: Chinese idiom meaning that the constant fear of being stolen from is more damaging than the actual robbery] If by any chance, Liu Tailong that son of a bitch were to come, I will let him have a taste of the ferociousness of my house's dogs. See if they won't bite him to death!" I said maliciously.

As soon as Grandpa heard this, he no longer raised any objection. If any house has kept several vicious dogs, then there is no fear of several hooligans coming.

On the same day, He Dachao came from town, driving a small sized tractor. The chickens and ducks raised by us were loaded onto the vehicle. Altogether worth three-four thousand yuan. The villagers were all looking on somewhat enviously.

He Dachao didn't give up after buying just the chicken and ducks, he even valued the pigs raised by us very highly. Especially our Old Yellow, He Dachao upon seeing it wanted to

quickly extend his hand, but at this time, he didn't dare speak about the matter of buying, because Old Yellow could very much bear a grudge, and had recognized He Dachao from far away. Certainly Old Yellow was able to recognize He Dachao possibly because of his smell.

These dealers have been engaged in this kind of buying and selling for a long time, even their body would have become infected with the uneasy smell of livestock. Old Yellow was already unusual, regarding smell was much more sensitive compared to other domestic animals.

"Hou!" Old Yellow seeing He Dachao from afar, at once made out a greeting, only the manner was not polite. Also don't know whether it was greeting the eight generations ancestors of He Dachao.

He Dachao seeing the bolt on the pen, no longer worried about Old Yellow rushing out from the pen, and said laughing: "Look, Old Yellow is greeting me."

He Dachao laughing heartily, waved at Old Yellow: "Old friend, we meet again. Didn't think that you would still be as enthusiastic." He Dachao went towards the bull pen entrance, wanting to touch Old Yellow's horns. Old Yellow suddenly withdrew and looked at He Dachao in a threatening manner.

He Dachao felt very regretful that he wasn't able to touch Old Yellow's horns: "Old friend, don't be afraid, I will be coming frequently in the future."

He Dachao turned to me and said: "Your rural area is really good, lots of space, big houses, even possible to raise such big house pets."

I didn't know what was the meaning of house-pet. We didn't raise idle livestock. They were required to work. Old Yellow had to till the fields, and also had to move things for me. Black Bean had to take care of the house. Big Flower, Second Flower, Little Flower, they all had to bear children. Several birds and chickens also had to lay eggs.

Old Yellow had been aggravated by He Dachao today. Taking advantage of the time when we were talking, it secretly used its horn to open the bolt, and directly rushed out while using its horn to throw He Dachao into the air.

He Dachao flew high up into the air before falling heavily down onto the ground.

"Aiyo! My butt, yo!" The pain resulted in He Dachao crying for his father and calling for his mother.

Old Yellow was still quite particular. He Dachao fell quite miserably, but also didn't have any big obstructions. After Old Yellow had succeeded, it ran away quickly. It knew that this was a house guest. In other cases, its actions wouldn't have been so impolite.

However, this He Dachao was really too hateful. If this can be tolerated, Bull cannot tolerate! [TLNote: I surely messed this up, but the original idiom goes, "If this can be tolerated, then what would be intolerable!" meaning this is something that cannot be tolerated. Author tried to bring Bulls into that idiom]

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 46

## Chapter 46 – Kidnapper’s Bad Luck

He Dachao was walking while rubbing his buttocks, only it had the appearance of smashed goods, but the intentions were still as damned as before: “Next time when your chickens and ducks mature, just call me on my pager. Your ox is really strong. It would be invigorating if I could raise such an ox.”

Fortunately, Old Yellow was far away, and didn’t hear what He Dachao had said, if Old Yellow were to have heard it, then afraid it would have come rushing over to give He Dachao a lesson.

In the weekend time, I was alone with my two disciples, and we were taking Old Yellow to town. Today, I had a lot of things to do in the town. Grandpa was also assured that I won’t be at any disadvantage.

Three brats, bringing along an Ox, going to town for shopping was also a rarity, leading to some caring person to come ask: Where are your parents? Did you separate from your grown-ups and got lost?

These kind of repetitive questions were arrogantly answered by my two disciples.

“We three have come to do shopping.”

“My....My family’s grown-ups didn’t come. Huang Shulang, why did you hit me?”

Huang Shulang was fulfilling the duty assigned to him by me, responsibly and diligently. Ma Jindong stuttered once, he absolutely wouldn’t lack in hitting once. After hitting, Huang Shulang put on a serious appearance, “Junior disciple, ah, It’s not that I want to hit you, this is just for your own good, ah.”

Those peddlers in the farmer’s market actually know me. Although, this time they were no longer as simple and kind as earlier, but they also disdained to defraud a brat. Certainly, they could also see, that even though I was a brat, but I was even shrewder compared to some of those old foxes.

A person’s basket full of chicks, after falling into my hands was swept clean of thirty of the best and biggest of the lot. After seeing that the chicken peddler wanted to cry: “If everyone was like you, there wouldn’t be any way for me to do business.”

However, he was somewhat exaggerating. Even though I had picked out the biggest thirty, it was still insufficient to put him out of business. After all in his bamboo basket there were about 100 chicks.

“Old Third is so stingy. Come to your Uncle Luo and select chicken as you like.” A nearby chicken peddler said with a smile.

“Won’t do, the ones that you are carrying are all leftovers.” I said laughing.

To the side, Old Third said laughing: “Child your eyes are really poison, those coming here to buy chicks are not really able to discern so much.”

Old Luo also laughed, he knew that this brat wasn’t easy to deceive.

“Huang child, are that fatty and that child your relatives?” Old Luo asked.

“My disciples.” I said clearly and simply.

Old Luo and Old Third laughed uproariously.

Old Luo nearly broke out into tears from laughing: “You just a brat, also have disciples. It’s something really uncommon.”

“Only I have also gotten accustomed to you child, shining out from amongst the rest.” Old Third smiled a complicated smile.

“You all must be very careful, there are a lot of pickpockets in the farmer’s market. They don’t engage in business like us, also they don’t have any shame in defrauding little children like you. They only look at money. You are carrying so much money, you must ensure that you don’t catch their eye.” Old Luo could see several dubious young people in the distance, always looking here. More so after I had revealed my wealth just a moment ago.

“No need to worry, my Master is a martial arts expert. One-two petty thieves coming over are just courting their own death.” Huang Shulang said.

Ma Jindong also refused to show weakness: “I also can hit....hit one or two.”

Without waiting for Huang Shulang to respond, Ma Jindong on his own smacked himself in the mouth, then lowering his head to Huang Shulang said: “Alright, for you.”

Huang Shulang was also impolite, just went up to Ma Jindong and patted on his head: “Remembered, Remembered.”

Huang Shulang and Ma Jindong, these two buffoons left the surrounding stall keepers quite amused.

“Old Third, where have these three children come from, how come they are so cheerful?”

“I also don’t know, probably they’re from the Huang clan at Ba Jiao village. They have come to market to buy chicks several times, I also don’t know.”

“These three children are quite intelligent. Just look like they are only 6-7 years old. My family’s son is still playing in mud god knows where. Other people’s children are coming to buy chicks.”

“My son can’t do anything at home. If I am not at home, he would probably starve to death.”

.....

After buying chicks and ducklings, I still didn't want to go back. I also wanted to buy two dogs. Buying dogs was not as easy as buying chicks or ducklings, as they were not really available everyday. If there were any, also don't know if I would be able to buy. I wanted to buy two ferocious dogs. This way, I could be able to train them at home, but still be able to rise into action. Black Bean was a local breed dog, he was quite intelligent but still wasn't brave and fierce enough. The last time's performance, left me quite unsatisfied. Actually, it was also I that was too young, and didn't know that nature of dogs, particularly native dogs. Actually native dogs could also be trained to become ferocious. I along with Huang Shulang and Ma Jindong made several rounds of the market, but still couldn't find any wolfdog seller.

Huang Shulang and Ma Jindong also asked around everywhere.

"Where are the wolfdog children being sold?"

"Are the wolfdog puppies being sold anywhere?"

.....

Following which, we had almost made one complete circle of the farmer's market, when a middle-aged man came walking forward.

"Do you want to buy wolfdog puppies?" That middle-aged man asked.

"Yes, Yes. Do you have?" Huang Shulang asked anxiously.

"I have, I have. I have a meat packaging company. We were also raising a pair of wolfdogs, who gave birth to a puppy who is month old. It just so happens that we are thinking of selling the puppy. If you want to buy, then the matter could be settled conveniently within one day." The middle-aged man said.

However, I recognized that this man was actually belonging to a group of three persons who had been waiting earlier.

My premonition towards danger was much stronger compared to an average person. An average person staring at me would make me have an uncomfortable feeling. I had already discovered the existence of these people. I saw that this middle-aged man was precisely a part of that group of people.

Although I knew that this middle-aged man harboured evil intentions, but I still expressionlessly followed behind Huang Shulang and Ma Jindong.

The middle-aged man took us through a confusing path. Finally, we arrived at a remote lane at the back of the farmer's market.

Huang Shulang only then discovered that something was not right: "Hey! Where are you taking us? Where is the dog?"

"Right. Don't think that you can bully us children, hurry up and bring that son-of-a-bitch, otherwise we won't go with you." Ma Jindong rarely spoke a complete sentence without stuttering.

That middle-aged man turned around, and grinning fiendishly came walking towards us three: "Take out all your money, and also leave behind this Ox for me. Then quickly run

away, otherwise we will sell you off to the coastal areas.”

That middle-aged man hadn't noticed that Old Yellow was following us all along without being tied with any rope. This also what made his consequences tragic. He still hadn't approached Old Yellow, when Old Yellow lifted its fore-legs, and kicked out. This move was really well practiced and tempered. Old Yellow had already practiced to the point of knowing it by heart in preparation to deal with He Dachao. Ultimately, this time we ran into this unlucky bastard.

The man's body rose several tens of feet, flew high up from the ground, the pitiful cry “Ah” resounded in the farmer's market for a very long time. After falling to the ground, the man didn't make any noise.

“He didn't die, did he?” Huang Shulang looked at me.

“How would we know without looking?” Ma Jindong prepared to go forward.

Huang Shulang hastily pulled back Ma Jindong, and knocked on Ma Jindong's head: “Are you an idiot? What if he by any chance feigning death? In TV the villains always feign death, and then carry out a sneak attack.”

“Then what to do?” Ma Jindong was feeling embarrassed.

I didn't speak, this kind of minor matter should be a test for these two disciples.

Huang Shulang ran around for a long time looking for a brick. Using the strength obtained from being breast-fed, he threw the brick. It didn't hit.

Smashing down to the ground it made a loud bang, and the stones on the ground jumped up several times.

“I come, I come.” Ma Jindong was even more ruthless, he ran around and found a big rock.

“You are an idiot. Such a big rock, can you throw?” Huang Shulang again knocked onto Ma Jindong's head.

“Both of you together.” I said.

Huang Shulang and Ma Jindong lifted the rock from different ends.

“1, 2”

Without waiting for 3, these two people threw the stone.

The stone smashed down directly on that middle-aged man's tip of the toe.

That middle-aged man jumped up immediately: “What did you not count to 3?”

“Why would we count to 3?” Ma Jindong was somewhat puzzled.

“This person is really sinister. If we were to have gone over, he would have acted at once.” Huang Shulang said lamenting, city people were really too cunning.

That middle-aged man hobbled, he hadn't thought that he would end up in such a sorry situation because of three kids and an ox. He pulled out a dagger from his person, and said viciously: “Refuse a toast, only to forced to drink a forfeit! I will catch you, and sell you



off to a foreign country!”

Huang Shulang and Ma Jindong were looking at the middle-aged man as if scared. I was also standing at my place staring blankly.

“Are you idiots? If you all had cooperated early on, I wouldn’t have had to take such steps.” The middle-aged man laughed coldly.

However, he hadn’t noticed that Old Yellow was bending slightly. Then just like a gust of wind, it rushed out. Old Yellow bent its head, angling straight for the man’s butt, before finally raising it up. The middle-aged man flew again, and the most miserable thing about that was that the dagger that was in his hands had gotten inserted into his own thigh unexpectedly.

“Ah!”

I immediately took Huang Shulang and Ma Jindong and ran away. Old Yellow also followed behind quickly.

That middle-aged man’s pitiful cries, continuously floated in the air behind our backs.

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 47

## Chapter 47 – Oracle Bone Script

As I was leading Huang Shulang and Ma Jindong out for the farmer's market, I bought a litter of native dogs in passing, worth 20 yuan each, so bought three for a total of 60 yuan. All were the most commonly seen yellow native dog.

Once back home, I recognised I had an omen.

That fatty Huang Shulang who hasn't seen the world, if after coming into such limelight today, he doesn't show off after going back, then he wouldn't be Huang Shulang.

Ma Jindong also spread several of his heroics strung together before his family.

As a result, the grownups got alarmed. Ultimately, as naturally, one could imagine, from that point onward the children's right to walk alone was deprived of them. I had a thought of expelling Huang Shulang and Ma Jindong from my Mastership.

After my return, Teacher Lin also twisted my ears and read me old man platitudes.

"Brat, your courage is getting bigger and bigger, dared to go shopping alone unexpectedly. If you were kidnapped and forced to work as a beggar outside, what would you do? How could you be able to cope with all of this as a child? Your hands and feet would be broken, making you all collect money, and every day a certain threshold would have to be met to receive food. If that task remained incomplete, not only would you be left with an empty stomach but you would also be beaten." Teacher Lin was really somewhat traumatised. The palms hitting my buttocks began to strike with more and more force. My spanked buttocks began to look as red as if they had a fever. At last finally, Teacher Lin herself started crying instead.

"Teacher Lin, I am not hurt, how about you hit some more times." I panicked somewhat upon seeing Teacher Lin crying.

"Brat, can you not let me be free from worrying about you. Later, I won't go home during the weekend. I would just stay and protect you in Ba Jiao village." Teacher Lin somewhat grievously put me down and pulled up my pants. I couldn't help but let out hissing sounds.

"Serves you right to hurt so much, always making me worry." Teacher Lin said spitefully.

I honestly climbed down. Only there was no necessity to take to the streets for any shopping. This time's shopping was also for the sake of buying a martial arts manual for Huang Shulang and Ma Jindong. Its name was also quite domineering. It was called, Great Ancestor Long Fist. Just hearing makes it seem not simple. I thought that Great Ancestor was even more ancestral compared to Great Grandfather.

Most importantly, it even had diagrams, and they seemed to be somewhat simpler compared to Xing Yi Five Fists.

Huang Shulang and Ma Jindong were acting as if they had found a treasure.

“Master, this martial arts manual was ten yuan for one book?” Huang Shulang turning to the back of the book, after seeing the price immediately became flabbergasted.

“What do you know? This is an encrypted book, the price behind the book does not have the price of the password. This is not the price at which you can buy the password.” I deceived them.

In fact, for me, it could really be considered a password. Because at this time, I already knew some of the wondrous uses of Primordial Qi. The Primordial Qi could treat a villager’s illness. It could also make Old Yellow and Black Bean more intelligent. It could also let Huang Shulang and Ma Jindong run to death every day, but be full of energy the next day. It could also let Grandpa and Teacher Lin not fall ill. This was my biggest secret. Subconsciously, I knew that if I told this matter to others, it would not be good. Therefore, I had begun keeping this a secret.

Teacher Lin and Grandpa know that I am somewhat special, but they do not know what exactly made me different from others. However, they discovered that my oddities were not bad, but rather they were something good. Therefore, they didn’t interfere. They allowed me free space.

Teacher Lin with this time’s trip, brought an even more ancient script for me to see, Oracle Bone Script.

Teacher Lin said that the Oracle Bone Script is the most ancient Chinese script. Moreover, it was even more ancient compared to the inscriptions on the bronze medallion.

Teacher Lin had brought for me a book by Guo Moruo 《Cattle Scapulae newly unearthed in Anyang and its inscriptions》. Opening the book, seeing those characters. I felt that I could see a completely different world. I didn’t need to look at the textual explanation, only needed to look at the pictures. Those pictures in my eyes, as if had become alive. It was the same as when I laid my eyes upon the bronze medal. These ancient characters had opened a mysterious world for me. [TLNote: It’s actually this book

<http://www.biblio.com/book/guo-complete-works-volume-1-archaeology/d/386233579>. Don’t worry I cross referenced with ISBN numbers]

“The characters are moving!” I said.

“What?” Teacher Lin cried out in alarm.

Teacher Lin didn’t know whether it is good or bad because I was special. So much that I couldn’t speak for two years. If this time owing to the Oracle Bone Script that she brought that something happens, then she would feel very guilty.

I could see these characters, dance and jump in joy. Teacher Lin wanted to snatch it from my hands, but she couldn’t even touch the hem of my clothes. It seemed as if, I had absolutely stopped moving, however, every time Teacher Lin tried to catch me, it seemed as if it would bend around automatically.

Teacher Lin more and more was unable to catch hold of me and became more and more worried.

“Huang Jingyang! Huang Jingyang! Wake up!” Teacher Lin yelled anxiously.

I could hear Teacher Lin's words, actually I also even came to my senses momentarily, and it was completely unlike that incident that happened to when I was five years old. At that time, I was completely immersed, unable to extricate myself. However, I was really interested in the information given to me by Oracle Bone Script.

What Teacher Lin didn't know was that in ancient times, the very first people who used Oracle Bone Script were called Shamans. At the very beginning, Oracle Bone Script was also not a written script. Rather, it was the cracks that emerged when animal bones were thrown into the fire and roasted. The shamans connected these cracks with phenomena, and the cracks became a tool to forecast good and bad fortune. Finally, the Shamans began recording these cracks, and it evolved into the most ancient written script.

The average person would see the Oracle Bone Script, but would only see an ancient written script and nothing more. The meanings of these written characters could make an Archaeologist spend their entire life in research. However, in front of my eyes, these written characters had become a living record. I saw the evolution of the world. These written script records were originally the vestiges of the motions in the world. These vestiges as far as I was concerned were just like law. To be precise, the Dao.

I used my hand to write in the air the Oracle Bone Script's 天 (Heaven/Sky) character. I instinctively knew that it was the 天 character of Oracle Bone Script. Later, it could be written out casually. Other people would find it difficult to write Oracle Bone Script, but in my hands, it became incomparably smooth.

The moment the 天 character was written, the worldly Primordial Qi immediately came rushing to towards me. If it had been earlier, I would have become panic-stricken at the situation. However, at this time, I was incomparably immersed. This was because from within the Oracle Bone Script, I could see the evolution of laws of the world. I understood how to collect Primordial Qi, how to operate it within the body. My cultivation was growing crazily.

The Oracle Bone Script 天 character that I wrote casually, couldn't stay for a long time. In less than half a minute's time, the 天 character disappeared from the air. The worldly Primordial Qi that was coming bubbling towards me from all over suddenly dissipated. I also broke away from that condition.

Teacher Lin had already begun crying out of anxiety. Grandfather upon hearing immediately rushed over.

“Teacher Lin, YangYang, what happened?” I could hear the anxiety in Grandpa's voice.

Teacher Lin with a weeping sound: “I also don't know. He just looked at the book once and became like that. Blame me, I shouldn't have given him that book.”

“Teacher Lin, don't be anxious, I think there is nothing to worry.” Although Grandpa was very much worried about me, but he was actually comforting Teacher Lin.

I just closed the book, and arrived at the side of Teacher Lin, “Teacher Lin, don't you

worry, I am all right.”

“You this brat!” Teacher Lin raised her hand to hit me, but the hand that was raised mid-air then fell down gently, only to tightly embrace me. As if afraid of losing me.

Grandpa also finally relaxed, seeing that Teacher Lin loved me so much, a faint smile emerged on his face, and he went out of the room.

“If only the Husband and wife couple could cherish the child just as much as a friend Teacher Lin, it would be good, ai!” Grandpa whispered outside in a low voice. How cold it escape my ears?

In Teacher Lin’s embrace, I could feel the Primordial Qi within my body. The Primordial Qi had unexpectedly completely turned into liquid. I could feel Primordial Qi flowing through the meridians in fast circulation, and all kinds of arteries and veins became even more complicated. I could feel that my body had become even livelier than before, as if I could even fly. At this time, If I used Primordial Qi to control my body to fly, then it shouldn’t be a difficult matter. Moreover, my comprehension regarding Primordial Qi script had deepened greatly. I believed that I could write even more formidable and powerful Primordial Qi characters at this moment.

However, I didn’t want to experiment right now. I could feel Teacher Lin’s warmth coming from her heart. This warmth I hadn’t felt in a long time. I don’t know when it started, I already no longer had the thoughts of going to see my Parents or my younger brother again. They were something remote to me, and they had started to become fuzzy in my memories. The pain of them leaving me had started to become dull.

# My Daoist Life - Chapter 48

## Chapter 48 – Drought

I thought for a few days, before finally giving the three puppies their names. The one whose fur had an outline of black, was called Black Gold, the one which had a black line on its mouth, was called Gold Bean, and the one whose entire body was golden and was also the most energetic was called Yellow Bean. Every day after coming back, I would pat a strand of Primordial Qi into these three sisters. At present, wherever I walk, these three sisters would follow.

Black Bean also very much cherished these three sisters, although don't know whether or not he had the idea of taking these three sisters as wives in the future. The domestic animals are nice, when they think of wives, they think of having many.

Huang Shulang and Ma Jindong would come every day, their eyes wouldn't budge away from my little three yellow dogs.

"Master, you already have Black Bean, these three little ones, how about you give one each to us fellow apprentices? You can still keep the one remaining." Huang Shulang looked at me impatiently.

I immediately kicked Huang Shulang: "Do you not see the expressions in the eyes of my little three yellow dogs as they look at me. It is not me being petty, these three little dogs cannot be taken away by you. They recognised their master. If you have the skill, if you can make these little darlings follow you, then you both can walk away with all three of them and I also won't go back on it."

Huang Shulang's face wilted all of a sudden, it was absolutely impossible to deceive these little yellow dogs. Domestic animals raised by me were intelligent, let alone dogs, even my chickens and ducks were very intelligent. Every day they would run off to other people's houses, snatch the food there and after eating to their full come back on their own. Sometimes, not only do they come back themselves, but also kidnap along other people's poultry and livestock.

"Don't always keep staring at the things in my hand. Think of ways to raise a dog by yourself. You think you can take things from my hand? Didn't my Eldest Grandpa's dog again give birth? You make your Father take a few jin of meat and go there, and wouldn't the matter be solved? That was how it happened with Black Bean."

My words made Huang Shulang's eyes brighten again. Ma Jindong's response was also not slow. These two fellow apprentices looked at each other once and then set off immediately. I had heard that my Eldest Grandpa's dog has given birth to only two pups and they had not completed even one month since. In the morning I met with Eldest

Grandpa, he had told me otherwise how would I know. If I didn't open my mouth, nobody else would think of coming into contact.

Me going to town to buy dogs was not entirely due to Black Bean's unsatisfactory performance, it was also because I had heard that babies born out of marriages between close relatives turn out to be retarded. Amongst the dogs in the village, the Eldest Grandpa's bitch was a close relative. I was thinking of looking for a way to find several wives for Black Bean that weren't close relatives.

The next day, Huang Shulang and Ma Jindong both attended school, while carrying a puppy each. Those dogs still hadn't completed a month, and along they way were making "guagua" noises.

"Why did you guys come over carrying the puppies? Do you even know how to raise them?" I said anxiously.

"It's alright, we have prepared milk. In the village some children don't get breast milk, don't they also drink cow milk?" Huang Shulang pulled out a baby's feeding bottle from his school bag and put in the puppies mouth. This little thing was also intelligent, it gnawed at the nipple sparing no effort to suck as much as possible.

Ma Jindong also followed suit, with the puppy that he was carrying.

I originally wanted to hold their puppies, but only these two bastards were guarding against me as if guarding against a thief.

"Master, it's not that we don't want you to hold these puppies, just mainly if it comes into your hands, then we are afraid it wouldn't return." Huang Shulang was tightly holding onto the little puppy.

"Who cares. Black Gold et al., come." I beckoned at the several dogs that were near my feet. Every day that I would go to school, Black Bean would lead along these three little child brides to see me off. After I reached school, he would take these three small yellow dogs to go home.

Although both of them were carrying a puppy in each of their hands, Huang Shulang and Ma Jindong were still incessantly looking on enviously at the four dogs being raised by me. It would be impossible for them to get permission to raise so many dogs in their house.

Huang Shulang and Ma Jindong remained spirited for the whole day. After returning, the puppies would just be brought to Eldest Grandpa's house, letting the mother and children reunite.

While Teacher Lin was taking the class, these two puppies kept rolling around and create a nuisance. Teacher Lin flipped out on the spot, and ordered the two boys to take the two puppies home before coming back to attend the class. Only then did I come to know that these two boys had used a stratagem of moving the tiger out of the mountain on Eldest Grandpa's bitch, and had stolen the puppies. After returning these little puppies, they would again eat small bamboo-shoot sauteed meat. Only, Eldest Grandpa still agreed. After these two puppies reach one month, he would let them take them home. On my account, Eldest Grandpa was somewhat especially good to my two apprentices. [TLNote:

Need I remind you that bamboo-shoot sauteed meat is a euphemism for getting beaten in the village?]

When the city gate catches fire, it's the fish in the moat who suffer. Because of these two kids, I also had shrooms pop up on my head. Teacher Lin placed the charge of being the ringleader of this time's theft on my head. Really one could get hit even while lying down to sleep.[TLNote: Again, Shrooms on the Head = Beaten on the head]

The reason that Teacher Lin was so direct and heavy-handed was because if not for me raising so many dogs, this unhealthy trend wouldn't have emerged in the class. Teacher Lin seized this chance to kill the chicken to warn the monkey, and to crack down heavily on the evil trends prevailing in the class. Quite unfortunately, I became that chicken that was used to warn the monkey. [TLNote: Kill the chicken to warn the monkey = Making an example out of someone by punishing one individual]

During the Dragon Boat Festival time, it hadn't rained for the whole day. The Elders in the village said that this was not a good sign. The rain on the fifth day of the fifth lunar month, tells about the year's climate. The farmers tilling the land also look at the sky for their living. If the rainfall is not good, then the farmer's days would also be not good. [TLNote: Dragon Boat Festival comes on the Fifth day of the fifth lunar month]

Ever since the Dragon boat festival, there hasn't dropped a single drop of rainwater. The rice paddy that was originally was already in the milk stage, were quickly drying out. The villagers were depending on the release of water from the reservoir.

However, very soon bad news came around. During the last year's new year celebration time, the Reservoir cadre in order to promote catching of even more fish had used up all of the reservoir's water under the belief that when the rainy season comes around the reservoir could be filled up again. Draining water in the period of low-water level naturally wouldn't conform to established custom, but the desires of men are able to make courage swell up greatly. However, this year's rainy season's rainfall was not too great. The reservoir couldn't store up too much water. Therefore when drought came around, the reservoir couldn't release even a drop of water. [TLNote: Period of low-water level a.k.a. Winter in North China]

"That does it again, this season's early rice would yield no harvest." Eldest Grandpa was discussing the matters of the field with Grandpa in the courtyard.

"Yes. How come this year's rainfall is so less? Last year's winter time when I saw water flowing in the canals, I felt something amiss. So it turns out it was the Irrigation office people who dried out the reservoir. These people are really wretched, this reservoir is the lifeblood of us several township farmers. This time they really will take our lives." Grandpa sighed.

"As for taking our lives, it is actually not as bad as that. At the moment, all the young people are out to work. There aren't many left to care for crops in the fields. An average family always has some surplus grains in the barn. However seeing their one month's harvest, all become dead. This would really make people hurt." Eldest Grandpa took a big puff, and two white smoke trails came out of his nostrils.

"If it was in the Republic of China era, then the village might as well start to pray for rain.



Nowadays, it is different, we have water conservation facilities, everyone relied on this reservoir.” Grandpa also melancholily smoked. Our family’s several mu large field also became dried up making it difficult to deal with.

As I walked while inspecting the sky, in the blue sky, there was not one white cloud to be seen. In the back of the mountain, the leaves of the fruit trees under the scorching sun had become wilted somewhat. This year’s drought has been really terrible. Not a trace of moisture could be felt in the air, walking on the road wearing sandals could make one feel the sandals becoming soft from the boiling hot ground.

Black Bean and the three little yellow dogs all would lay under the grape trellis, all of them with their mouths open, and tongues out, constantly panting. They were all looking on listlessly, as I passed by their side.

I squatted by their side and patted a strand of Primordial Qi into their bodies. All four dogs became invigorated immediately and arrived jubilantly by my side. The three little yellow dogs had already grown so much, but they all still looked very cute. All of them threw themselves at me, creating constant din on my body.

Huang Shulang and Ma Jindong carrying a pail and fishing net arrived at my house’s gate.

“Second Grandpa, is my Master at home?” Huang Shulang reached the gate but didn’t notice me sitting under the grape trellis.

“What are you up to?” I immediately replied.

“Master, the Dama river’s water has already dried up, a good many people have gone to catch fish. We came to see if you are coming?” Ma Jindong’s stutter had almost become cured.

“Go, What Go? If it doesn’t rain, the fish in my fish pond would all die out. There’s not even a place to put the caught fish.” I said ill-humoredly.

I was feeling quite vexed regarding this matter. At the moment, the rice crops in the fields have almost all but withered. Everyone was staring at the water of this pond of mine, it seems strange to say, the water in the pond even being exposed to the sun hasn’t dried up the same way, until now the pond water was going slowly. In fact, although the pond water looked like it was a lot, but it wouldn’t be able to irrigate sufficient enough area.

“YangYang, fatty and all came to ask you to play, you go play with them. Boys should not stay cooped up in the house all day.” Grandpa seeing Huang Shulang and Ma Jindong somewhat disappointed, immediately said loudly.

“Ok.” I immediately prepared to set out.

Teacher Lin also came.

“Where are you preparing to go?” Teacher Lin saw the various things in the hands of Huang Shulang and Ma Jindong.

“Teacher Lin, we are preparing to go catch fish in the Dama river.” Huang Shulang said raising up the fishing net in his hands.

“Huang Jingyang, you are also going, eh. Wait a minute, I am also coming with you.”

“You want to come?” We three people spoke at once.

“Why are you making those faces? Can’t I come?” Teacher Lin stared at us. We all immediately shut our mouths.

As soon as Teacher Lin went inside, I immediately kicked Huang Shulang’s butt: “Just your loud mouth.”

As we arrived by the river side, the Dama river that was usually flowing with water, at this moment was a sight that made my heart skip a beat. In the more than ten meters wide channel, only the middle gulley had water remaining in them. There were diesel engines everywhere on the river bank, roaring and rumbling as the water was pumped out to irrigate the fields.

There were also a lot of little brats like us, and big brats who were just running around everywhere fishing with their fishing nets. Some little brats just simply took off their pants and throwing themselves immediately at the first sign of movement in the water. Often cheers could be heard from the little brats, for every small or big fish that was fished up from the Dama river.

Looking at all of this made me somewhat grieved, these all could have been my fish!

**Take your favorite novel wherever you go**  
**[novelepubs.xyz](http://novelepubs.xyz)**